![VisionIAS - Inspiring Innovation logo]

POLITICAL SCIENCE AND INTERNATIONAL RELATIONS (PSIR)

VALUE ADDED MATERIAL

PAPER 1 SECTION A
MAINS 2025

Key Features:

- Crisp coverage of Key Concepts
- Curated Scholarly Quotes and Analysis
- Contemporary Interlinkages
- Equipped with Model Introductions and Conclusions for Answer Writing

AHMEDABAD BENGALURU BHOPAL CHANDIGARH DELHI GUWAHATI HYDERABAD JAIPUR JODHPUR LUCKNOW PRAYAGRAJ PUNE RANCHI

Table Of Content

Unit 1: POLITICAL THEORY: MEANING AND APPROACHES

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

- ⊕ **Behavioural approach to Political science (2024)/10M**
- ⊕ **Elucidate the meanings inherent in the term 'political' with appropriate illustrations. (2024/20M)**
- ⊕ **'Credo of Relevance' in post-behaviouralism advocates the importance of action science. Analyse. (2023/15M)**
- ⊕ **Normative approach in Political science. Comment. (2023/10M)**
- ⊕ **Decline of political theory. Comment. (2023/10M)**
- ⊕ **Eurocentrism is both the target and the motive force of post-colonial political theory. Discuss. (2023/15M)**
- ⊕ **Systems Approach. Write in about 150 words. (2022/10M)**
- ⊕ **Examine the importance of behavioural approach in political theory. What led to its decline? (2021)**
- ⊕ **Discuss the significance of normative approach to political theory. (2020)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: Resurgence of political theory. (2019)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: Decline of political theory. (2018)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: The Post-Behavioural Approach. (2016)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: "…political theory is not an escape mechanism but an arduous calling." (John Plamanatz) (2014)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions emphasize the evolution and relevance of various political science approaches, particularly **behavioural**, normative, and post-behavioural. They focus on understanding the **decline** and **resurgence** of political theory, the shift from **Eurocentric** perspectives, and the role of **action science** in post-behaviouralism. The repeated queries on the importance of the **behavioural** and **normative** approaches highlight their enduring significance in political analysis.

It is essential to grasp how these themes interconnect with broader political theory trends and their implications for current political analysis.

Introduction

What is Political Theory?

According to George Catlin, "Political theory includes Political Science and political philosophy, where science is concerned with means while philosophy is concerned with the end."

Whereas John Plamenatz defines it as, "Analysis of political vocabulary and critical examination, verification, and justification of political augments".

Meaning of the term "Political"

The term "Political" is derived from the word "polis" which literally means the city. It is a place with the common world described as a community. Politics is hence related to the management

Political Theory	Political Philosophy	Political Science
▷ Involves the analytical study of **ideas** and **concepts** central to political thought. ▷ Its evolution is generally traced from the tradition of thoughts from Plato to Marx.	▷ A branch of learning primarily concerned with the **moral** and **substantive** dimension of politics. ▷ It is the **search for wisdom** and understanding, critically evaluating political beliefs and refining concepts.	▷ Essentially **empirical**; describes, analyzes, and explains **government** and other political institutions. ▷ According to **David Easton**, it could adopt the methodology of **natural sciences.**

POLITICAL THEORY VERSUS POLITICAL SCIENCE

Political Theory	Political Science
▷ It is not only concerned about the **behavioural study** of the political phenomena from an **empirical point of view** but also about prescribing the **goals** which **states, governments, societies,** and **citizens** ought to pursue. ▷ Political theory also aims to generalize about the **right conduct** in political life and about the **legitimate use of power.** ▷ According to **David Held,** in the absence of political theory and its systematic pursuit, there is a danger of politics being left to the **ignorant**.	▷ **Political science** is much more comprehensive and includes different forms of speculation in politics such as **political thought, political theory, political philosophy, political ideology, law,** and **organizations** etc. ▷ **Political science** is concerned with describing and explaining the realities of **political behaviour,** generalizations about **man** and **political institutions** on **empirical evidence,** and the role of **power** in society.

Significance of Political Theory and Political Science

▷ **Clarity** about these reflections enables us to understand social and political problems. Scientific **analysis** enables us to understand and solve these problems while **political philosophy** guides us towards betterment.

▷ The tradition of **Political theory** has encouraged an order of dignified debate between proponents of opposing thoughts. The two branches of **Political Theory** i.e., **science** and **philosophy** together perform the task of **description**, **criticism**, and **reconstruction** of ideas/concepts.

Approaches to Study of Political Theory

In Political Science, **Vernon Van Dyke** considers approach as defining criteria for selecting problems, reliable data, and appropriate procedures for utilizing them to arrive at conclusion. For instance, **behavioural approach** and **normative approach.**

Traditional Approach	Contemporary Approach
▷ Broadly, the **traditional approaches** are dominated by the study of **philosophy, law, history,** and **institutions**. ▷ The traditional approach largely remained **normative**. ▷ **For example, Rawls' theory of justice,** though contemporary, belongs to the **normative approach.**	▷ In the **contemporary approach,** the focus is on the **behaviour** of different actors in politics. ▷ The beginning can be traced to the end of **WW-II** as **Political Science** faced a crisis of identity and relevance. ▷ In order to bring political science at par with other **Social Sciences,** political scientists gave prominence to the **empirical approach.** ▷ **Aristotle's** comparative analysis of **constitutions** and understanding of **revolution**.

Normative Approach	Empirical Approach
▷ The **normative approach** focuses on **values** and prescribes the preference for a particular type of order as dictated by **morality** to achieve "what ought to be" (what should be). ▷ **Ex-** In the **theory of justice**, a **normative approach** defines what the meaning of **justice** is. ▷ **Criticism: Morality** can be subjective, so there can be many definitions of **Justice**. Therefore, it is subject to a **biased understanding.**	▷ The **empirical approach** seeks to discover and describe the **facts**. It relies on **observation** through sensory experience to describe "what is?". ▷ **Ex-** The **empirical analysis** will give a detailed account of **voting behaviour** in a particular election. ▷ **Criticism:** It only describes a particular phenomenon and does not give any **value judgment** or **plan of action**. According to **Robert Dahl,** in politics, not deciding is simply deciding to allow others to decide for you.

Despite having pros and cons, both are important for the study of political science. There is a need to build a bridge between the two.

Significance of a Normative Approach to Political Theory

- ▷ **Isaiah Berlin** defines the normative approach as the discovery and application of moral notions in the sphere of political relations and practice.
- ▷ A **Minimalist normative approach** formulates minimum standards of ideas and norms and a maximalist normative approach **formulates ideal standards** which no phenomenon could achieve.
- ▷ By making ideas like **justice** and **equality** an end in itself, the normative approach always strives to derive a **perfect order of peace and prosperity.** Without a normative approach, society and polity run the risk of **visionless directions** and conflicts that could end the very existence of these institutions.
- ▷ The normative approach faced decline post WW-II with the advent of **Behavioural Revolution.** However, in recent times there has been the **resurgence** of normative approach in **Macphersons's theory of democracy, Rawls theory of justice** and also in writings of **Dworkin, Amartya Sen,** etc.

> **Daryl Glasser says,** *"Engagement with normative theory proceeds from the hope that moral actors who debate their options in an open and self-conscious way will, on the whole, do fewer of the things most of us would consider bad than those who proceed unreflectively or suppress moral debate."*

Traditional Approaches

Philosophical Approach	Historical Approach
▷ It has its roots in **classical Greece.** It also goes by the name of **political philosophy.** This tradition is credited to **Plato** as its founder. Most **classical political** theory uses a philosophical approach to represent **normative orientation.** ▷ It follows a **deductive method** that begins with an assumption and goes on to establish it through **logical reasoning.** ▷ Ex- **Plato's Republic, Rawls' Theory of Justice.** ▷ **Criticism: Utopian, Biased,** and **Unrealistic**.	▷ Since the beginning, **thinkers** have regarded **history** as the primary source of analysis. ▷ Main exponent: **Machiavelli** (adopted historical approach), **Montesquieu**, etc. ▷ **Sir John Seeley** regarded history as **past politics** and **politics** as **present history.** ▷ **Criticism: Ernst Baker** and **David Easton** criticize **historical approaches** as inadequate to guide or resolve present problems (**difference of times**). Moreover, any **political theory** is not only the product of **history**.

Legal Approach	Institutional Approach
▷ The **legal approach** is concerned with the study of **constitutional law** and **legal institutions**. ▷ **Cicero, Jean Bodin, Austin, Grotius, Bentham, A.V. Dicey** (Law of the Constitution), etc., are the chief propagators of this approach. ▷ The method is largely **descriptive** and **institutional** and is guided by logic and reason rather than **facts** and **events**. ▷ **Criticism:** It is inadequate in understanding complex **political processes** and **behaviour** outside the **legal framework**.	▷ Its roots lie in **Aristotle's study** of multiple constitutions, where he classifies the constitutions of **Greek City States**. ▷ It studies the **structure** and **function** of the **government** and its **organs**, as well as **political parties.** Its methodology is **descriptive** and **institutional**. ▷ **Scholars: James Brice, Laski,** and **G.A. Almond.** ▷ **Criticism:** No wide-reaching theory can be constructed from this approach as it is **descriptive** and cannot be applied to the situations in **developing countries.**

CONTEMPORARY APPROACHES

With the rapid growth of **natural sciences,** efforts were made to develop **Political Science** as a distinct discipline in the **United States.** The efforts of the **American Political Science Association** established an autonomous discipline in **Political Science,** taking it away from **History, Philosophy, Economy,** and **Law**, and closer to **Sociology, Anthropology,** etc.

Decline of Political Theory

During the mid-20th century, the exponent of political science began to question the relevance of traditional political theory. **David Easton** in his work *"Political System: An enquiry into the state of political science"* (1953) asserted that the traditional political theory was devoid of observation. It could not explain the political reality.

Easton opined that- to lay the foundation of science in the study of politics it became **necessary to rescue it from the study of classics and history.** He also pointed out that there was **no outstanding political philosopher after Marx and J. S. Mill.**

During the Second World War, theorists of all the other Social Sciences were actively involved in the process and decision making while political scientists remained at back footing.

David Easton provided four reasons for decline:

Historicism	Moral Relativism	Confusion between science and theory	Hyper-factualism
Less relevance to resolve contemporary issues	Relativistic attitude of Weber and Hume Non-subjection of values to critical analysis.	The scholars confused science with theory and forgot that theory goes beyond science.	Problem of over-factualization and under-theorization.

Dante Germino *(book- Beyond Ideology the Revival of Political Theory)* gave two reasons for decline of political theory viz. **craze of science** (positivism) and **culmination of ideological evolution** into **Marxism**.

Behavioral Approach

The origin can be traced to the works of **Graham Wallas** *(Human nature in Politics)* and **Arthur Bentley** *(The process of government)* where they laid emphasis on the process of politics than on political institutions.

▷ **Graham Wallas** insisted on exploring facts and evidence to understand human nature and its manifestation in human behaviour. The political process could be understood only by analysing how people actually behaved in Political situations, not merely by speculating how they should behave.

▷ **Charles E. Merriam** *(New Aspects of Politics)* criticized Political Science for its lack of scientific vigour. He criticized historians for ignoring the role of psychological sociological and economic factors in human affairs.

▷ **G.E.G. Catlin** *(Science and Method of Politics)* advanced the case for value-free science. He considered power as an essence of politics and its analysis should not be inclined in favour of any particular value system.

▷ **David Easton** In his article *"Decline of modern Political Theory"* attributes poverty of theory in discipline to preoccupation with the past and failure in taking up the task of building a systematic theory of Political behaviour.

▷ David Easton summed up the intellectual foundation of behaviouralism in his paper *"The Current meaning of behaviouralism in Political Science"* in 1967. He describes **8 major tenets or intellectual foundations** of behaviouralism.

Easton's Intellectual Foundations of Behavioralism

Social Science Integration	Empirical Testing	Analytical Techniques	Knowledge Organization
Interdisciplinary Connections	Data Collection	Research Methods	Framework Development
Integration	**Verification**	**Technique**	**Systemization**

Behavioralism in Political Science

Pure Science	Regularity	Quantification	Values
Objective Analysis	Pattern Recognition	Statistical Analysis	Ethical Considerations
Scientific Approach	Behavioral Trends	Data Quantification	Value Impacts

The works of **Robert Dahl, Phillip Converse,** and **David Easton** shifted the focus on studying political behaviour rather than the institution or interpretation of the legal text. Thus, **Behaviouralists** shifted the focus in the study of politics from **Formalism** and **normative orientations** of **legalistic** and **philosophical** schools to **political behaviour.**

Decline of Behaviouralism and Resurgence of Post-Behaviouralism

The behavioural approach widened the scope of political science and talent traditional vertical analysis. However, it has been **criticized for mindless empiricism.** Behaviouralists tend to study only those phenomena that are easily observable and can be analysed rather than focusing on what is actually important. **Karl Popper** rejected the **narrow inductive approach** of scientific methodology.

CONTEXT

In the 1960s, political scholars were **clueless** about addressing crises, focusing on **electoral behavior.** Easton criticized **behaviorists** for their irrelevant research, contributing to political science's **decline.**

David Easton held that political scholars were sitting in Ivory Towers, perfecting their techniques. They fail to understand the purpose for which technique is to be used. So he gave the Creative Theory with two features- action and relevance.

Resurgence of Political Theory

▷ John Plamanatz stated, "Political theory is not an escape mechanism but an arduous calling".

▷ Dante Germino criticized behaviouralism for "over quantification and under theorizing".

8

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI
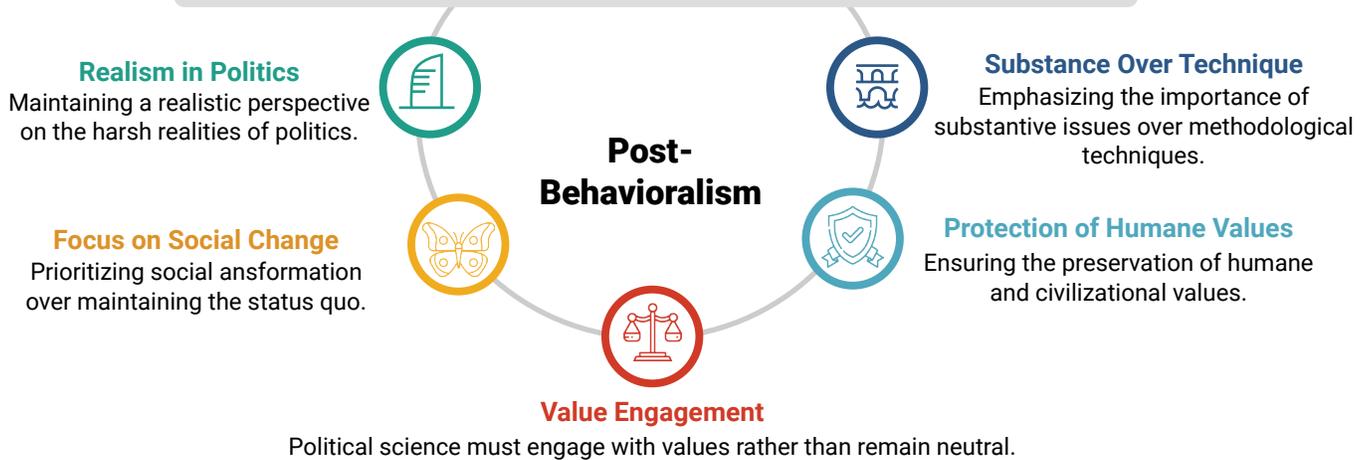
▷ Critics like Leo Strauss argued that the rise of behaviouralism was symptomatic of a crisis in Political Theory because of its inability to deal with normative issues. Sheldon Wolin accuses behaviourists of abdicating their true vocation.

▷ Rawls (Theory for Justice) is being credited for the resurgence of political theory.

In 1969, David Easton himself in his presidential address American political science Association announced a new revolution in Political Science, i.e., Post behavioural revolution.

What is post-behavioural revolution?

▷ Post-behaviouralism represented a shift from strictly methodological issues to greater concern with public responsibilities of the discipline and political problems.

▷ David Easton gave twin slogans of post behaviouralism "credo of relevance and action". He also gave seven features of post-behaviouralism.

▷ It was not a complete departure from Behaviouralism rather it stood for building upon the gains of behaviouralism and utilising it for problem solving. Thus, it shifted the nature of political science from pure science to applied science.

▷ Post behaviouralism succeeded in resolving the fact-value dichotomy.

▷ If normative Political Philosophy is thesis and Behaviouralism anti-thesis, Post-behaviouralism exemplifies synthesis.

Embracing Action and Values in Political Science

Realism in Politics
Maintaining a realistic perspective on the harsh realities of politics.

Focus on Social Change
Prioritizing social ansformation over maintaining the status quo.

Post-Behavioralism

Substance Over Technique
Emphasizing the importance of substantive issues over methodological techniques.

Protection of Humane Values
Ensuring the preservation of humane and civilizational values.

Value Engagement
Political science must engage with values rather than remain neutral.

Isaiah Berlin: He says that political theory is neither dead nor in the state of decline. He says that there cannot be an age without political philosophy. Berlin argued that as long as rational curiosity existed political theory would not die nor disappear.

George H. Sabine: He opined that *"if political theory is systematic, disciplined investigation of political problems, then it is difficult to say that political theory was dead in the 1950s and 1960s."*

Introduction for the Answers

▷ Political theory is the foundation of political science, focusing on the study of concepts like freedom, justice, and democracy. As John Plamenatz puts it, it critically examines political actions, clarifying the goals and values of politics.

▷ Political theory is the study of concepts and principles used to describe and explain political events and ideas. It examines foundational concepts like power, justice, equality, and democracy, offering both normative and empirical insights into political life and governance.

▷ Political theory offers a comprehensive approach to understanding governance, addressing the nature and purpose of political structures. It uses empirical, logical, and evaluative statements to explore political phenomena, providing deeper insights into human nature and societal structures.

▷ The study of political theory transcends practical concerns, offering a philosophical and evaluative perspective on political life. It integrates history, philosophy, and contemporary approaches to help us understand governance, justice, and human rights in a nuanced way.

9

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Interlinkages

▷ **Theories of State:** Political theory helps in understanding foundational ideas in theories of the state, such as **Locke's Social Contract** or **Marx's concept of the State.** These theories analyze the legitimacy of political authority and the role of the state, linking theoretical principles to the practical functioning of governance as seen in modern states.

▷ **Justice:** Political theory is essential in the exploration of **Rawls' Theory of Justice.** The normative approach in political theory directly informs the examination of fairness, distributive justice, and the ethical considerations in political structures, offering frameworks that relate to **egalitarian justice** and the **communitarian critiques** of Rawlsian justice.

▷ **Indian Political Thought:** The **normative approach** to political theory can be applied to understand the political and social justice frameworks in **Indian political thought**—for instance, how **Ambedkar's critique of caste** in his works like **"Annihilation of Caste"** challenges the traditional views of society laid out in Dharmashastras, highlighting tensions between social hierarchy and democratic principles.

▷ **Voting Behaviour (PSIR Paper 1B):** The **behavioural approach** in political theory can be linked to the study of **voting behaviour** in **PSIR Paper 1B.** The focus on empirical observation and psychological influences in the **behavioural approach** allows for a deeper understanding of voter attitudes, political participation, and the impact of social factors on electoral outcomes, which can be studied through surveys and analysis of voting patterns.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ Understanding Political Issues: Political theory remains essential in understanding complex contemporary issues like poverty, population growth, corruption, injustice, and conflict. It helps analyze these problems and offers alternative solutions for political leaders.

▷ Democratic Resilience: With the rise of authoritarianism and democratic backsliding, contemporary political theory provides essential frameworks for understanding these phenomena. It helps analyze the erosion of democratic norms and offers insights into safeguarding democratic institutions.

▷ Social Justice Movements: The resurgence of movements like Black Lives Matter and climate activism highlights the relevance of political theory in articulating demands for equity and justice. Contemporary theories of justice and rights guide these movements' strategies in fighting systemic oppression.

▷ Globalization and Multiculturalism: As societies grow more diverse due to globalization, political theory helps in exploring the implications of multiculturalism and pluralism. Theories on cultural diversity and inclusive policies guide policymakers in managing diversity and ensuring social cohesion while respecting cultural differences.

▷ Climate Change and Environmental Justice: Political theory's normative approach to justice plays a critical role in the debate on environmental justice and climate change. It provides tools for analyzing ethical obligations towards future generations and marginalized communities, addressing inequality in environmental degradation and resource distribution.

▷ Identity Politics and Recognition: The rise of identity politics and the debate on recognition are linked to political theory. The communitarian approach, as articulated by thinkers like Charles Taylor, helps understand how societies address issues of gender, race, ethnicity, and religion within the larger framework of national identity and justice.

▷ Behaviouralism and Micro-level Politics: Behaviouralism focuses on analyzing micro-level situations, such as voting behavior and elite decision-making, using empirical methods. This approach explains the role of non-state actors and mass political participation, offering systemic explanations for political behavior.

▷ Hannah Arendt's Critique of Behaviouralism: Hannah Arendt revived normative political theory by emphasizing the human condition and the importance of acting in concert. She criticized behavioralism for neglecting totalitarianism, power, and the true nature of modern democracy.

▷ Robert Nozick's Rejuvenation of Political Theory: In his work "Anarchy, State, and Utopia", Robert Nozick reinvigorated political theory by returning to the tradition of normative analysis informed by empirical findings, contributing to contemporary discussions of liberty and state intervention.

▷ Macpherson's Theory of Democracy: Macpherson's theory moves beyond the focus on procedures to a more democratic vision that emphasizes enhancing citizens' creative freedom. This approach seeks to strengthen democratic institutions while balancing individual rights and collective governance.

▷ Emergence of New Themes: The resurgence of political theory in the modern age has brought forward new themes such as communitarianism, postmodernism, multiculturalism, feminism, and environmentalism, which are increasingly shaping political debates and influencing policy changes globally.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Political theory, in its multifaceted nature, continues to serve as the foundation for understanding political dynamics. Its evolving approaches help us navigate political challenges and ideologies, promoting a more informed and just political discourse.

▷ Isaiah Berlin and David Held suggest the study of political theory is essential in avoiding political ignorance. It ensures a deep understanding of concepts like justice, power, and authority, critical for both scholars and practitioners.

▷ In today's political climate, with the rise of authoritarianism and identity politics, political theory's interdisciplinary approaches are indispensable. Michael Walzer highlights, theory helps us make sense of moral dilemmas and offers solutions to pressing societal issues.

▷ Michael Oakeshott argues, no single approach can fully encompass the complexities of politics. Political theory serves as a continuous exploration, guiding us through the fluid and unpredictable nature of political life, where certainty is elusive.

Unit 2: THEORIES OF STATE

"Political Science begins and ends with state".

- Rawls

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

⊕ **Pluralist theory of State. (2024)**
⊕ **Examine the liberal theory of State in contemporary politics. (2023)**
⊕ **Factors like community, culture and nation weaken the hegemony of neoliberalism today. Discuss. (2022)**
⊕ **Feminist critique of the State. Comment. (2021 & 2016)**
⊕ **Pluralist theory of the State. Comment. (2019)**
⊕ **Critically examine the neo-liberal theory of State. (2018 & 2017)**
⊕ **Post-colonial theory of the state. (2020 & 2011)**
⊕ **Examine the conception of the State in the ideologies of Fascism and Marxism. (2014)**
⊕ **What is meant by 'relative autonomy' of State in Marxist analysis? (2012)**
⊕ **Evaluate Marx's instrumentalist approach to the State. (2010)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions highlight diverse theories of the State, including pluralist, liberal, neo-liberal, feminist, and post-colonial perspectives. The focus on Marxist theory, particularly the instrumentalist approach and relative autonomy, reflects the ongoing importance of class and power in state analysis. Repeated references to neo-liberalism and its challenges emphasize contemporary debates on state control and global capitalism. Understanding these theories in relation to community, culture, and nation is crucial for addressing modern critiques of state power.

Introduction

▷ According to Raymond G. Gettel, "Of all social institutions, the state has been the most universal and most powerful. Some form of organisation and authority has been found wherever human life has existed, and a sanction of some kind has enforced some sort of rules."

EVOLUTION OF THE CONCEPT OF THE STATE

The evolution of the concept of the state in political thought reflects changing philosophical, historical, and social contexts. Brief overview is as follows:

▷ **Ancient Greek Philosophers:** The ultimate aim of having a good life filled with knowledge led them to believe in the utility and virtue of the state.

 ▸ During ancient times, the Greeks developed critical thinking and the method of dialectics.

 ▸ Both Plato and Aristotle, considered the state as a source of virtue and natural institution maintaining equality and justice though they differed in the conception of state and king.

▷ **Medieval times:** political science was a sub-discipline of the religious authority of the church. The divine rights theory of kingship provided unhindered powers to the ruling class to rule.

▷ **Medieval Europe:** In medieval times, the state became closely associated with kingship, often viewed as deriving its authority from divine right.

▷ **Social Contract Theory:** Social contract theorists, such as Thomas Hobbes, John Locke, and Jean-Jacques Rousseau, introduced a mechanistic view of the state. It means the state is a product of a social contract among individuals, created to secure their natural rights and promote common interests.

12

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

▶ **Modern Concept:** In modern political thought, particularly influenced by Max Weber, the state is defined by its monopoly over the legitimate use of physical force for maintaining order within a territory.

▶ **Post Modern Times (Post WW-II):** Rise of transnational or supranational systems of governance like the European Union. However, the 2008 Financial Crisis and Brexit reflect reversal of trend and going back to the era of Nation State.

▶ elaborate a little more on social contract (including scholars , refer to our test series question we have dealt it there)

THEORIES OF ORIGIN OF STATE	
Social Contract Theory	**Evolutionary Theory**
▶ **Origin of State:** 　▸ The state is a result of a voluntary agreement between citizens, making it a man-made institution. ▶ **Purpose of State:** 　▸ The state serves the common good and represents the public interest, acting as an instrument of utility. ▶ **Opposition to Idealistic and Divine Theories:** 　▸ Challenges the Idealistic Theory which views the state as natural (organic theory), where the state is prioritized over the individual (Aristotle: "Man is by nature a political animal"). 　▸ Rejects the Divine Origin Theory, which argues the state is a representative of God.	▶ **Origin of State:** 　▸ According to MacIver and Gettel, the state evolved from various pre-existing associations like kingship, village, and church. ▶ **Limitations on State Power:** 　▸ MacIver believes that the state developed from these earlier associations and thus aims to limit the power of the state. **Origin of State** 　├── Social Contract Theory — Hobbes 　└── Evolutionary Theory — MacIver

Therefore, the concept of the state has evolved from being seen as a natural and organic entity to a more contractual and institutional one, reflecting changing ideas about the nature of political authority and governance.

> **Gettel:** *"The state is a gradual and natural historic evolution. It is neither the gift of divine power nor the deliberate work of man. Its beginnings are lost in that shadow of the past in which social institutions were consciously arising, and its development has followed the general laws of growth."*

Criteria of Statehood

The accepted criteria of statehood were laid down in the Montevideo Convention (1933), which provided that a state must possess-

1. A permanent population
2. A defined territory,
3. A government, and
4. Sovereignty or capacity to conduct international relations.

Criteria for Statehood

Sovereignty	Permanent Population
The ability to engage in international relations	A community residing within the state's borders
Government	**Defined Territory**
An organized system of governance and law	Geographical boundaries that outline the state's ares

Among these, sovereignty is the most important feature and was recognised as an essential element in the Treaty of Westphalia.
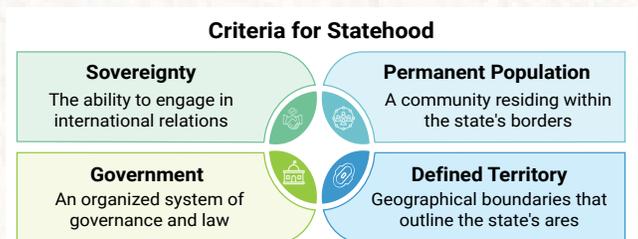
Theories of Sovereignty of State

Jean Bodin defines sovereignty as "supreme power over citizens and subjects, unrestrained by law." Sovereignty is the most distinctive feature of the modern state.

▶ In Medieval times, there was no clarity whether the Church is sovereign, or state is sovereign.

▶ In Modern times, Treaty of Westphalia (1648) made it clear that sovereignty lies with the state and state is a territorial entity. Thus, the state remains a supreme authority to make and enforce laws.

13

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

INSPIRING INNOVATION

📞 **8468022022**   🌐 **www.visionias.in**

The concept of sovereignty has 2 dimensions: Internal and External.

▷ Internal- Within a particular territory, state made laws will prevail and no other institution will compete with the state.

▷ External- State will not be controlled or governed by any external authority.

> **Hugo Grotius:** *"Sovereignty is the supreme political power vested in him, whose acts are not subject to any other and whose will cannot be overridden."*

Monistic Theory of State Sovereignty

Context: Medieval chaotic situation and feudalism.

Contribution of Hobbes (**Book**- Leviathan)

▷ For establishing clear supremacy of the state and giving complete theory of state sovereignty, Hobbes is regarded as the first modern thinker.

▷ He asserted that sovereignty lies with the state and sovereignty is absolute, permanent, and indivisible.

SIGNIFICANCE OF THE THEORY

▷ It ended the prevailing confusion of medieval times. Thus, it put an end to the chaos and established the law-and-order situation.

▷ Further, the theory created a conducive environment for the rise of capitalism. In present times as well, the Monistic Theory is followed largely.

PLURALISTIC THEORY OF STATE SOVEREIGNTY

Context: Need of avoiding WW-I and WW-2 like situation as monistic nation state system is war prone because monistic state does not have regard for international laws. With the emergence of international laws post WW-II, there was realisation of the need to limit power of the state and promote human rights.

Thus, Pluralism is a feature of liberalism, and it stands for a limited state.

▷ **Features of the Pluralistic Theory**

▸ **Monistic theory as legal fiction:** The pluralistic theory sees the monistic theory of state sovereignty as a legal fiction, meaning it rejects the idea that the state holds absolute and indivisible sovereignty.

▸ **Conflict resolution:** The main function of the state, according to pluralists, is to resolve conflicts among various competing interests and associations within society.

> Harold Laski criticized the **Monistic Theory of State** for concentrating too much power, risking autocracy and threatening international peace.
>
> In contrast, **MacIver's concept of the Service State** argued that the state's legitimacy arises from fulfilling useful functions, earning respect through service.

▸ **Dilution of state sovereignty:** Pluralist scholars aim to dilute the sovereignty of the state, advocating for the recognition of international laws and other institutions to share authority.

▸ **Limited state:** Pluralism is a feature of liberalism, supporting the idea of a limited state with a focus on individual rights and freedoms.

▸ **Harold Laski's critique:** Harold Laski is a key critic of the Monistic Theory of state, arguing for a more decentralized, participatory form of governance.

▸ **R.M. MacIver's perspective:** An extreme pluralist, MacIver viewed the state as just one of many associations (like the kingship or church), which existed independently of the state. He believed the state was a man-made institution.

▸ **Concept of service state:** MacIver introduced the concept of the "service state," where the state earns respect by fulfilling useful functions for society rather than simply commanding authority.

▸ **Sociological and political explanation:** The pluralistic theory is grounded in sociological and political explanations of sovereignty, contrasting with the legalistic approach of the monistic theory.

▸ **Distinction from anarchism:** While pluralists are critical of the monist state, they do not advocate for its complete elimination, unlike anarchists, who seek to abolish the state entirely.

▸ **Promotion of international peace:** Pluralism is considered more conducive to international peace and human rights, as it allows for a balance of power among diverse groups and international bodies.

14

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

CRITICAL EVALUATION OF PLURALIST THEORY

▷ **Realistic explanation:** In the age of federalism and the growth of multiple associations like the UN, ICJ, EU, etc., we cannot accept the monistic view that law is just the command of the sovereign. Thus, monistic theory is relevant for jurists and lawyers. It is a legal fiction. On the other hand, pluralistic theory is a sociological and political explanation.

> **Commentaries…**
>
> **Acemoglu and Robinson (Book- The Narrow Corridor)** argue that it is not advisable to give too much power to the state as socio-cultural norms also keep people disciplined. They coined the term- **"shackled leviathan"** to depict the state of affairs wherein the power is balanced between the society and the state.

▷ **Inconsistency in ideas:** The pluralists are against the monist state, but they do not eliminate the state (this is also the major difference in anarchists and pluralists). It is said that pluralists want to keep the cake and have it too.

▷ **Elitist thinkers:** Scholars like Mosca, Pareto, etc. reject pluralism and believe that behind the façade of liberal democracy there lies the permanent power of the "ruling elite".

Thus, even when pluralism is inconsistent it does not mean it is irrelevant. Consistency is not the most important requirement of a sound theory. Pluralism is more relevant because it is more realistic and more conducive for international peace and human rights.

Theories of State

1. Liberal Theory of State

Mainstream political theory is dominated by the liberal theory of the state. This theory emerged out of the writings of social-contract theorists such as Hobbes and Locke.

The liberal theory of the state focuses on individual freedoms, limited government, and rule of law. The state is a neutral arbiter among competing groups and individuals in society. It is an 'umpire' or 'referee', capable of protecting each citizen from the encroachment of his or her fellow citizens.

LIBERAL CONCEPTION OF THE STATE: MACHIAVELLI TO MILL

▷ **Niccolo Machiavelli and Jean Bodin:** Machiavelli and Bodin were among the first to articulate new concerns about the state, examining its origins, foundations, relationship with society, functions, and whose interests it should represent.

▷ **THOMAS HOBBES (1588-1642)**
  ▸ **State as Solution to Human Nature:** Hobbes, in his work "Leviathan," analysed the state as a necessary solution to the natural condition of humans, which he described as a "war of all against all." In the state of nature, life is "nasty, brutish, and short".

▷ **John Locke (1632-1704)**
  ▸ **State as Protector of Natural Rights:** Locke rejected the idea of an absolute sovereign and argued that the state exists to protect the natural rights of life, liberty, and property.
  ▸ **Limited Government:** Locke's state is an instrument for protecting citizens' rights, not a dominant force over them, marking a significant departure from Hobbes' absolute state.

▷ **John Stuart Mill (1806-1873)**
  ▸ **Democracy and Individual Liberty:** Mill advocated for representative democracy as an end in itself, emphasizing the harmonious development of individuals and the protection of individual liberty.
  ▸ **Representative Democracy:** Mill proposed a representative democracy to ensure individual satisfaction and free development, while also regulating the limits of societal power over individuals.

These scholars collectively shaped the liberal conception of the state, evolving from early concerns about state foundations and functions, through Hobbes' emphasis on order and absolute power, to Locke's focus on natural rights and limited government, to Mill's advocacy for democracy and Rousseau's idea of direct democracy.

FUNCTIONS OF STATE

▷ Classical Liberals (Adam Smith and Bentham) and Neoliberals (Hayek, Nozick and Friedman) support a minimal or night-watchman state.

▷ Laski suggests that the state should make arrangements for social and economic rights. TH Green advocates for positive liberty, emphasizing the capacity building of individuals. Other contemporary positive liberals like MacPherson, Rawls, Amartya Sen, and Dworkin support affirmative action policies to enhance social and economic equality.

15

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

2. Marxist Theory of State

Frederick Engels (Book- The Origin of the Family, Private Property and State) mentions that the state is neither a natural organisation (organic theory) nor a manifestation of will of the people (mechanistic theory). Marx and Engels provide a class perspective on the state.

Perspectives on State → **Instrumentalist Perspective** → **Theories of Deelopment and Underdevelopment**

Structuralist Perspective → **Theory of Overdeveloped State**

Instrumentalist Perspective	Structuralist Perspective
Instrumentalist Theory of the State: In his work The State in Capitalist Society (1969), **Ralph Miliband** studied the post-capitalist societies and argued that **the state is invariably an instrument of class power.** He argues for the **unity between state power and class power** (similar to Classical Marxist Position). **Marxist notion:** According to **Marx**, the class which controls the base or basic structure controls the elements of superstructure. Thus, the state acts as an **instrument of the bourgeoisie class.** **Perpetuation of Class Character:** Miliband contends that the class character of the capitalist state is perpetuated by several factors: ▷ The **middle or upper-class background of state officials.** ▷ The **economic power of the capitalist class.** ▷ The **inherent desire of politicians and bureaucrats to maintain the existing economic system** on which their own positions depend. **Lenin** (Book- The State and Revolution (1917): "According to Marx, the State is an organ of class rule, an organ for the oppression of one class by another, it is the creation of 'order', which legalizes and perpetuates this oppression by moderating the conflict between the classes."	▷ It is also known as **Relative Autonomy Theory of state.** It believes that **superstructure in itself is a structure, and its role cannot be ignored.** ▷ The origin of this concept can be traced to the work of **Marx** (The *Eighteenth Brumaire of Louis Bonaparte*). ▷ In this book, **Marx** gives the concept of Bonapartist State (state is not an instrument, rather there can be a situation where state becomes more powerful and acts as an equilibrium maker/ relatively neutral arbiter between the classes).

Neo-Marxist View on State

Antonio Gramsci, a neo-Marxist, introduced the concept of the state's relative autonomy in Marxism. He introduced a clear distinction between the two levels of superstructure:
▷ Political society (which includes coercive structures and uses force for domination), and
▷ Civil society (which includes legitimating structures like family, school, and church, and it relies on consent).

These institutions instill respect for the ruling class, creating hegemony and legitimizing bourgeois rule. The stability of capitalist society depends on the effectiveness of civil society. Coercion by political society is only necessary when civil society fails to prevent dissent.

1. NICOS POULANTZAS (BOOK- POLITICAL POWER AND SOCIAL CLASSES, 1973)

Structuralist Theory of the State: Poulantzas' structuralist theory of the state distinguishes between the position of the capitalist class and state power. He argues for the relative autonomy of the state, suggesting that class domination does not automatically translate into state power, and the state cannot simply be regarded as an instrument of a class.

Legitimacy of the State: Poulantzas believes the state enhances its legitimacy by invoking the authority of "the people," while the capitalist class boosts its legitimacy by distancing itself from state repression.

Role and Function of the State: The state's relative autonomy helps improve its economic performance and promotes capitalist interests. He views the state as an arena of class struggle, rejecting Miliband's concept of the unity of class and state power.

16

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

2. ALTHUSSER'S CONTRIBUTION

Althusser provides a multi-structural perspective (presence of multiple structures) and believes that power belongs to the state.

The state acts through two institutions or apparatuses i.e., ideological state apparatus and coercive state apparatus.

RALPH MILIBAND AND NICOS POULANTZAS: DEBATE

After facing challenges from Marxism, capitalist states adopted a more humane approach and evolved into **welfare states.** Miliband and Poulantzas studied these post-capitalist states to understand their nature and determine whether they act in the interest of the poor.

Miliband's conclusion	Poulantzas' Observations
Miliband arrived at the conclusion that the state still is an instrument of the capitalist class as **economic power** remains concentrated in the hands of few. **Reasons:** ▷ Miliband found that state and bureaucracy are dominated by the economically dominant class. ▷ He calls the Managerial Revolution a myth because the managerial class is primarily from capitalist or upper class, as management education is unaffordable for the poor people. **THE MANAGERIAL REVOLUTION (CONCEPT GIVEN BY JAMES BURNHAM):** As per the theory, there has been a shift of power from capitalists into the hands of managers. Managers can be from any background, even from the working class. **Oxfam Report and Thomas Picketty's Capital in 21st Century** highlight the glaring inequalities in society.	His arguments are based on the theory of **Relative Autonomy**. He calls the **post-capitalist states** as **relatively autonomous** as the state acts in the interests of both **poor** and **rich** (capitalists). **For instance,** in response to labour movements and protests, states have enacted laws like **minimum wage** and **collective bargaining rights,** even when these measures conflict with business interests. The **competitive party system** demands that the political programs of political parties must cater to the needs of all the classes in order to remain in power. However, Poulantzas calls the state as **relatively autonomous** because in **crisis situations** the state supports only the **dominant class.**

3. THEORY OF DEVELOPMENT AND UNDERDEVELOPMENT

The Instrumentalist Approach, developed by Latin American and African Marxist scholars such as A.G. Frank and Samir Amin, offers a critical analysis of the ongoing effects of colonialism in Third World countries, which have transitioned into a state of neocolonialism. This approach suggests that despite political independence, these countries remain economically and politically controlled by Western powers.

▷ **Exploitation by MNCs:** Multinational corporations from Western countries exploit the resources and labour of Third World nations, continuing the colonial pattern of wealth extraction.

▷ **Development of Underdevelopment:** The flow of wealth from poor to rich countries persists, exacerbating poverty and underdevelopment in the Global South. Thus, instead of progressing, these countries experience increasing poverty.

▷ **Class Division of States:** Scholars argue that capitalism as a global system creates a hierarchy among nations, similar to class divisions within societies. States are categorized into:

  ▸ **Core (Metropolis, Rich State):** Advanced industrial economies of the North that benefit from global capitalism.

  ▸ Periphery (Satellite, Poor State): Developing countries of the South that are dependent on and exploited by core countries.

▷ **Lack of Autonomy in Developing States:** From this perspective, states in developing countries are not truly autonomous or sovereign. Instead, they function as puppet regimes serving the interests of the capitalist class in core countries.

  ▸ An example is the Saudi Monarchy, which is seen as a client regime of the USA, prioritizing American interests over its own people's needs.

The Instrumentalist Approach highlights the persistence of colonial structures in a neocolonial guise. This exploitation and dependency contribute to the continuing poverty and underdevelopment in these regions, challenging the notion of true sovereignty and independence.

17

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

4. NOAM CHOMSKY'S CONTRIBUTION

American intellectual Noam Chomsky extends this analysis by highlighting that the state in the USA acts as an instrument of its capitalist class. The state in the USA had gone to war (e.g., Vietnam, Iraq, Afghanistan) to protect capitalist interests. This dynamic reinforces the subservient position of states in the Global South, perpetuating poverty and dependency.

3. THEORY OF POST-COLONIAL STATE

WHAT ARE POST-COLONIAL STATES ?

Post-colonial states are those which have had a colonial past and continue to inherit the colonial legacy, such as administrative structures, legal frameworks, etc. These states are often referred to as Countries of the South, Third World Countries, or Developing Countries. Examples include India, Pakistan, Myanmar, and South Africa.

> **Frantz Fanon:** *"The history of all developing countries, which have put an end to colonization, is a history of decolonization."*

KEY FEATURES OF POST-COLONIAL STATES:

▷ Post-colonial states often see the persistence of **power structures** established during colonial rule.

▷ **State formation** in post-colonial societies is complex, involving struggles for independence, new border formations, and the integration of diverse ethnic groups. (For example, Sri Lanka).

▷ Many post-colonial states face **economic challenges** due to colonial-era resource exploitation.

▷ **Neocolonial economic arrangements** often involve control over resources by powerful countries or corporations.

▷ Post-colonial states often face **developmental challenges** related to infrastructure, education, healthcare, etc.

1. EDWARD SAID'S CONCEPT OF ORIENTALISM

Edward Said's "Orientalism" (1978) explains how Western societies have depicted the Orient (East) in a biased way to justify their rule and dominance. He argues that Orientalism created a distorted and negative image of the Orient, portraying it as backward and irrational, which made Western imperialism and colonialism seem necessary and beneficial. This biased view was spread through Western literature, art, media, and scholarship, making the West appear superior and rational.

Said showed that these cultural representations were manipulated to maintain Western hegemony over Eastern societies. Through his analysis, Said highlights the power dynamics in knowledge production and questions the neutrality of Western academic and cultural discourse.

> **Edward Said:** *"Every single empire in its official discourse has said that it is not like all the others that its circumstances are special, that it has a mission to enlighten, civilize, bring order and democracy, and that it uses force only as a last resort."*
>
> **Gayatri Chakravorty Spivak:** *She emphasized that Orientalist narratives frequently marginalized and silenced the voices of the very people they aimed to represent. Spivak famously posed the question, "Can the subaltern speak?"*
>
> **Franz Fanon** (Book- The Wretched of the Earth): *"When a colonialist speaks of the 'development' of the 'backward' countries, what he means is that the exploitation of [those countries] has reached new heights now."*

Middle East Region through the American Lens

American media coverage of the Middle East often emphasizes **conflict, terrorism,** and **veiled women,** reinforcing **Orientalist stereotypes.** These portrayals shape public opinion and influence foreign policy.

Gayatri Spivak and Subjugation of the Subaltern

Gayatri Spivak built on **Foucault's notion of epistemic violence,** highlighting how **non-Western perspectives** have been marginalized through the dominant **Western Knowledge System.** She focused on women, arguing that **colonialism** erased their **cultural identities,** preventing them from authentically expressing their experiences and understandings of the world.

2. NATURE OF POST-COLONIAL STATE : VARIOUS PERSPECTIVES

Nature of State from Western Perspective:

The nature of the state can be understood through approaches such as:

▷ Political Development Approach

▷ Political Modernization Approach

Important Works:

▷ Fred Riggs – Concept of Prismatic Societies

▷ Gunnar Myrdal – Concept of Soft State

2.1. FRED W. RIGGS' "PRISMATIC SOCIETY MODEL"

Overview: This model offers a detailed framework for understanding the diverse and intricate nature of societies and governments in developing countries. Fred W. Riggs' **"Prismatic Society Model"** describes developing countries as diverse, transitioning from underdeveloped to developed, with features of both traditional and modern societies. This complexity leads to governance challenges due to misaligned administrative structures.

Riggs calls the **post-colonial societies** as **prismatic (India)**, and developed societies (USA) as **diffracted** societies.

Fused-Prismatic-Diffracted Model (Fred W. Riggs)
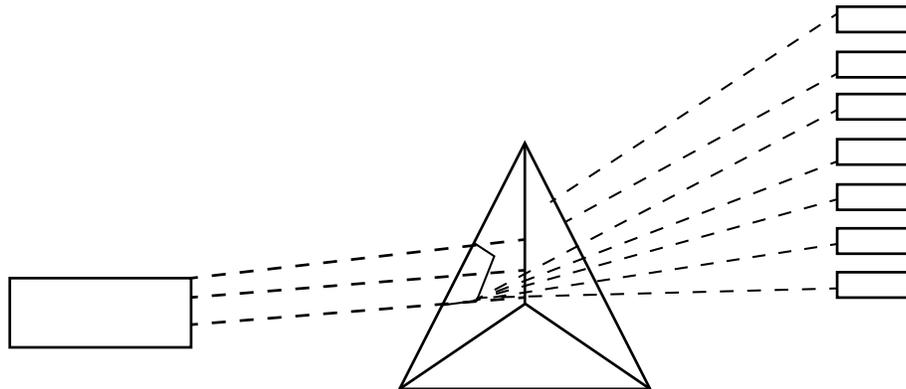
Fused	Prismatic	Diffracted
ascription	attainment	achievement
particularism	selectivism	universalism
functional diffusion	poly-functionalism	functional specificity

FEATURES OF PRISMATIC SOCIETIES:

▷ **Heterogeneity:** In this system, various patterns, rules, systems, and viewpoints coexist. The society is a mix of fused and diffracted elements.

▷ **Formalism:** There is a significant gap between theory and practice, highlighting the difference between what is formally prescribed and what is effectively practiced.

▷ **Overlapping Structures:** Differentiated and undifferentiated structures coexist, leading to overlapping administrative behaviours from both types of societies.

This model is crucial for comprehending the unique governance challenges in these societies, stressing the need for flexible administrative systems to effectively address their diverse needs.

2.2. GUNNAR MYRDAL'S CONCEPT OF SOFT STATE

Gunnar Myrdal, in his book Asian Drama, introduced the idea of a **"Soft State"** using India as an example. He argued that India's **weak law enforcement** and **poor governance** would hinder its success in **poverty alleviation** programs.

REASONS FOR INDIA BEING A SOFT STATE:

▷ **Corruption:** Widespread corruption in the political system and bureaucracy hinders the proper implementation of laws. Corruption is partly a legacy of **colonial rule,** perpetuating inefficiencies.

▷ **Gandhian Legacy of Disobedience:** The **Gandhian tradition** of **civil disobedience** has influenced **India's political culture,** leading to a scenario where even leaders do not strictly adhere to laws. This results in a culture of lawlessness and weakens state authority.

▷ **Cultural Factors:** Indian society often respects muscle power over law-abiding behaviour. Law-abiding individuals are sometimes seen as weak, further undermining respect for the rule of law.

Myrdal's concept of a soft state explains why **India** struggles with **effective governance** and **poverty alleviation.** Addressing issues of **corruption, cultural attitudes towards law,** and **leadership behaviour** is crucial for improving the state's capacity to enforce laws and implement policies effectively.

19

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

2.3. HAMZA ALWI'S CONCEPT OF OVERDEVELOPED STATE

The **Theory of Overdeveloped State,** from a Marxist perspective, suggests that post-colonial states like those in South Asia have a state structure more developed than their basic economic structures. This is because these states inherited a modern state system from their colonial masters, which led to the establishment of a **powerful, centralized authority.**

Unlike Western states where the **bourgeoisie controls the state,** in overdeveloped states, the state itself controls the bourgeoisie. This is a result of historical conditions such as colonialism and the continuation of colonial legacies, which granted the state overwhelming power.

The state's dominance is further reinforced by its role in the **independence movement** and its adoption of a **state-led developmental model,** concentrating economic power within the state. As a result, the state emerges as the most powerful institution, creating what is known as a **Military-Bureaucratic Oligarchy,** as seen in Pakistan. While the post-colonial state is not entirely autonomous, it acts on behalf of three classes: the **indigenous feudal class,** the **indigenous bourgeoisie class,** and the **metropolitan bourgeoisie** (capitalist class of Western countries).

3. Significance and Criticism of Post-Colonial Theory of State

Post-colonial theories challenged **global exploitation** and **Eurocentric views,** advocating for **third-world cooperation** and preserving postcolonial state sovereignty. Critics argue it lacks concrete **state theory** prescriptions and avoids key issues like **state origins** and **legitimacy**. Its focus on the **third-world** limits its **universal applicability** and may hinder understanding compared to Western theories.

Despite the limitations, **post-colonial theory** offers valuable insights into **third-world nations,** their **socioeconomic structures,** and impacts of **globalization**. It enriches **political theory** by integrating **post-colonial states** into mainstream discourse. since the topic reflects the recurring theme in the exam, try to provide model introductions and conclusions , along with that add some practice questions also, can refer to our test series questions also.

Feminist Theory of State

1. LIBERAL FEMINISM (TRUSTING THE SYSTEM)

These feminists, like John Stuart Mill (On the Subjection of Women) and Mary Wollstonecraft (A Vindication of the Rights of Woman), believe the state can be a force for good. They advocate for political rights for women (suffrage) and increased participation in government (holding office).

2. MARXIST FEMINISM (SKEPTICAL OF THE SYSTEM)

Marxist feminists view the state as an instrument of the capitalist class that also exploits women. They believe that dismantling capitalism, not relying on the state, is key to women's liberation.

Robin Morgan's assertion, "We can't destroy the inequities between men and women until we destroy marriage," reflects the critique of traditional institutions that perpetuate women's economic and social subjugation, notably through unpaid domestic labour.

Friedrich Engels, a key figure in Marxist thought, argued in "The Origin of the Family, Private Property and the State" that the end of capitalism would bring about the end of women's exploitation within the economic system.

3. RADICAL FEMINISM (DISTRUSTFUL OF THE SYSTEM)

Radical feminists see the state itself as inherently patriarchal, reflecting male dominance in society.

Carole Hanisch's famous slogan "the personal is political" highlights how societal norms and power dynamics within families and relationships contribute to broader gender inequality.

Catherine MacKinnon (a radical feminist) views the state as inherently patriarchal. MacKinnon argues "there is no feminist theory of the state" because it simply reinforces existing power structures. Analyzing rape laws in the US, she sees them favoring men due to low conviction rates.

This reinforces her view of the state as "male." Thus, she proposes dismantling patriarchy (starting with ending heterosexual marriages) to achieve true gender equality.

4. POSTMODERN FEMINIST PERSPECTIVE

Deconstructs traditional notions of gender, arguing that gender identity is fluid and constructed through social and cultural practices.

Judith Butler's idea that "Identity is performatively constituted," highlights the challenge to fixed gender identities and promotes inclusivity and diversity.

Thus, though feminist perspectives on the state vary, they share a common focus on understanding the power dynamics in society, particularly how patriarchy impacts women and transgender individuals.

20

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Introduction for the Answers

▷ The theory of state is a key concept in political theory. It focuses on understanding the state's nature, origin, and functions, and how it ensures order and justice in society. -This can be used in general topics, liberal theory of state, and state and globalization.

▷ For Marxist Theory of State- According to Marxists, the state is a part of the superstructure, a reflection of the base. Since the base (means of economic production) is controlled by the capitalists, the state too is controlled by the capitalists. Engels, in his book Origin of Family, Private Property, and the State, has given the Force Theory – the state is not a result of a social contract but is forced upon the weak by the strong.

▷ Post-colonial states emerged after World War II, characterized by the legacy of colonial rule, struggling with sovereignty, development, and identity while grappling with inherited political and economic structures from their colonizers.

Interlinkages

▷ **Western Political Thought (Liberalism and Marxism)**
  ‣ The **Theory of State** is central to **Liberal** and **Marxist** political thought, with **Liberalism** focusing on limited government and individual freedoms, while **Marxism** views the state as an instrument of class oppression.

▷ **Indian Political Thought (Kautilya and Gandhi)**
  ‣ Kautilya's **Arthashastra** and Gandhi's ideas contrast in the **Theory of State,** with Kautilya advocating a **realist** state for material well-being, and Gandhi promoting **minimalist governance** for self-rule.

▷ **Comparative Politics (Globalization and Sovereignty)**
  ‣ The **Theory of State** helps analyze **globalization's** challenge to state sovereignty, with **neo-liberal** theories advocating global governance, while **traditional** state theories emphasize national sovereignty.

▷ **Indian Government and Politics (State and Governance)**
  ‣ The **Theory of State** informs **India's governance model,** blending **liberal** ideals (constitutional democracy) and Marxist critiques of capitalism, influencing the state's role in welfare and economic policies.

▷ **Federalism (Center-State Relations)**
  ‣ The **Theory of State** underpins **India's federal system,** balancing **unitary** central power with regional autonomy, reflecting debates on **state sovereignty** and **governance in multi-tiered states.**

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Impact of Globalization on Sovereignty**
  ‣ The **Theory of State** is crucial in understanding the challenge **globalization** poses to state sovereignty. With growing interdependence, states must balance global governance with maintaining domestic authority, particularly in **trade, climate policy, and security.**

▷ The **Pluralistic Theory of Sovereignty** is relevant today as federalism and international bodies like the **UN, ICJ,** and **EU** challenge absolute state sovereignty, promoting shared governance and cooperation among states.

▷ **Rise of Authoritarianism and the State's Role**
  ‣ The growing **authoritarianism** in countries like China and Russia brings **realist** state theories to the forefront, where states assert power over individual freedoms and international norms to maintain **political control.**

▷ **Neoliberalism and the State's Economic Role**
  ‣ **Neoliberal economic policies** highlight the **state's diminished role** in welfare, focusing instead on market-driven solutions. The **Theory of State** helps evaluate whether the **state's role** is increasingly focused on regulation rather than active governance.

▷ **Post-Colonial State and Neo-Imperialism**
  ‣ **Post-colonial states** are grappling with their **sovereignty** while facing **neo-imperialism** through global **capitalism**. The **Theory of State** helps in understanding how these countries navigate **external influence** and internal **political stability.**

▷ **Marxist Theory**

- ▸ The **Oxfam Report** and **Thomas Piketty's Capital in the 21st Century** highlight **economic inequalities,** supporting **Marxist theory of state.** The state, as per Marxism, perpetuates **capitalist dominance** by protecting **class interests,** exacerbating **wealth disparity.**

▷ **Environmental Governance and the Role of State**

- ▸ As global environmental challenges rise, the **Theory of State** informs **policy-making,** highlighting the **state's role** in regulating environmental practices. States must balance **economic growth** with **environmental sustainability,** reflecting their evolving role in global governance.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ **Garner** stated, "Political Science begins and ends with state," highlighting the centrality of the state in political theory. Understanding its nature and theories is essential for grasping political dynamics in the modern world.

▷ Theories of the state provide essential frameworks for u**nderstanding political authority.** They help us navigate complex relations between **power, governance, and individual freedom,** shaping modern political discourse.

▷ While state theories offer valuable insights, they also reflect the inherent **power structures.** The evolving nature of the state demands ongoing critique, especially in **contemporary challenges** like globalization and inequality.

Unit 3: JUSTICE

Insights from PYQs

The questions focus on Rawls' theory of justice, especially his concepts of justice as fairness and democratic equality. The communitarian critique challenges Rawls' individualistic approach, while comparisons are drawn with Ambedkar's notion of social justice and egalitarian justice. The repeated reference to distributive justice and entitlement theory underscores the ongoing relevance of these debates in modern political thought. Understanding the contrast between Greek perspectives and Rawlsian justice is crucial for grasping different conceptualizations of fairness and equality.

Introduction

Justice has primarily been the domain of moral philosophy, but it has to be implemented by a political order. The concept has been found in the inquiries of all political thinkers and is a subject of all political dialectics. Justice is a foundational concept of political theory and practice. John Rawls holds justice to be the first virtue of social institutions.

What is Justice?

▷ **Distributive Principle:** Justice serves to organize people together into a right or fair order of relationships by distributing to each person his or her due share of rights and duties.

▷ **Dynamic Idea:** The term justice has been assigned different meanings by people in different times and spaces. For instance, slavery was considered just in ancient Greek philosophy, but today slavery is one of the worst values.

▷ **Aristotle's Idea:** According to Aristotle, political rights, wealth, property, materialistic things, and prestige should be allotted based on distributive justice.

▷ **Impact of Renaissance:** New concepts of justice emerged in the works of Grotius, Hobbes, Locke, and Kant. For Hobbes, justice was following the authoritative order of the state. Utilitarianism propounded by Bentham sought to derive justice based on the hedonistic calculus of pleasure and pain. Marxists believed the fundamental element of justice is the end of capitalism and class conflict.

> **KEY FACTS...**
>
> **Major Works:** *A Theory of Justice (1971), Justice as Fairness (1985), Political Liberalism (1993).*
>
> **Key Ideas: Procedural and Substantive Justice, Veil of Ignorance, Original Position, Lexical Order, and Reflexive Equilibrium.**
>
> **Major Critics: Will Kymlicka, Michael Sandel, Michael Walzer, Charles Taylor, Amartya Sen, Catherine MacKinnon,** and other feminists.

23

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Today justice is seen in terms of redistribution of resources based on affirmative action. So, the idea of justice has been a dynamic concept, and it is still evolving.

Distributive Justice

Any social value has some criteria for its nature and distribution. Justice, from the perspective of distribution, has three criteria: Equality, Merit/Desert, and Need.

Equality based Justice	Merit or Desert based Justice	Need based Justice
▷ With the universal recognition of human rights and human equality, equality has become the important basis of any theory of justice. ▷ The fundamental demand for justice is that everyone gets equal rights in society. ▷ Economic, social, and political equality is a fundamental feature of any just society.	▷ It is a **non-egalitarian** concept of justice. It emphasises the idea of **innate worth** of an individual. ▷ **Aristotle,** distributive justice requires that goods and rewards be distributed based on merit and virtue. ▷ Merit is an important part of liberal justice which is expressed by the principle of **equality of opportunity.** ▷ These ideas serve to give a conservative, social-**Darwinian** defence of free-market capitalism. **Herbert Spencer** and **Edmund Barker** are chief exponents of this idea.	▷ Every person has some **minimum necessities** for being a human which have to be satisfied irrespective of personality or merit. ▷ **Necessity** is one of the criteria to bring in a just distribution of resources. ▷ **Karl Marx** advocated for need based justice- *"From each according to his ability, to each according to his needs"*.

Procedural Justice

Justice is giving one's right which allots rights, duties and material in the society and amending the mistakes by punishment and penalties as per legal arrangement. This approach to justice is also called procedural justice. According to its proponents, it is necessary to determine a just procedure for the allocation of social advantages (ex- Rawls' idea of justice).

The five procedural steps, or "conjectures" in Rawls are:

1. Entering into the contract,
2. Agreeing unanimously to the contract,
3. Including basic conditions in the contract such as freedom of speech,
4. Maximizing the welfare of the most disadvantaged persons,
5. Ensuring the stability of the contract.

Evolution: The notion of procedural justice originated in Aristotle's thought. However, it comes close to the tradition of liberalism. Procedural justice ensures freedom of contract which is protected by the state which will ensure that no individual or group would oppress another by fraud.

Linkage with Neoliberalism: Proponents of market economy treats procedural justice as model of human behaviour. Scholars like Hayek, Nozick and Milton Friedman suggest that market economy creates necessary conditions for growth.

Navigating Rawls' Contractual Process for Social Justice

Contract Entry
The initial step of engaging in the contractual process.

Unanimous Agreement
Achieving consensus among all parties involved.

Rawls' Contractual Process

Basic Conditions
Achieving consensus among all parties involved.

Welfare Maximization
Focusing on the well-being of the most disadvantaged.

Contract Stability
Ensuring the long-term viability and security of the contract.

In India, procedural justice was followed until the **Maneka Gandhi judgement.** Thereafter, the basis of law making has become the mix of procedural justice and due process of law.

CRITICAL EVALUATION

▷ It rejects discrimination on grounds of caste, creed, sex, religion, etc, and accepts equal dignity and moral worth of all human beings. Though the idea is progressive, yet it overstretches the notion of competition.

▷ C.B. Macpherson argues that this strictly procedural capitalist mode destroys the creative freedom of human beings. John H. Sachar believes that talents might not be rewarded according to their intrinsic worth because of social hierarchies present in the society.

> *It doesn't matter who wins if the rules and the procedures followed in a race are just.*
>
> *- Norman Barry*

Thus, it is suggested that the state should create adequate opportunities for all and eliminate unjust discrimination.

Substantive Justice

▷ **Meaning:** Substantive justice refers to the **justness and fairness** of the content and outcomes of laws, policies, etc. It goes beyond procedural justice by focusing on the **fairness** of the process and the outcomes.

▷ It ensures that there is no concentration of wealth, and it emphasizes the redistribution of resources to provide **maximum equal opportunity.**

John Rawls' Theory of Justice

▷ **John Rawls (1921-2002)** was an influential political philosopher known for his work on **justice** and **political liberalism.**

▷ According to him, Justice is the principle of the distribution of primary goods in society. He divides primary goods into **social goods** (e.g., wages, wealth, rights, freedom) and **natural goods** (e.g., health, intelligence).

▷ **Theory of Justice as Fairness:** Rawls introduces the concept of an **original position** and **veil of ignorance** to ensure fairness in the creation of just societal structures.
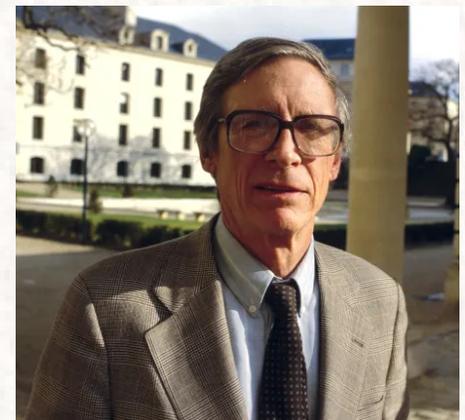
ORIGINAL POSITION AND VEIL OF IGNORANCE

▷ **Original Position:** The **"original position"** is a central concept in Rawls' theory. It is a hypothetical situation where rational individuals, unaware of their personal attributes (e.g., **gender, race, social class**), would choose the principles of justice.

▷ **Veil of Ignorance:** The **veil of ignorance** ensures fairness by preventing parties from knowing their personal circumstances. This promotes impartial decisions in determining justice.

PRINCIPLES OF RAWLS' THEORY OF JUSTICE

▷ **First Principle: Equal rights and liberties** for all citizens, ensuring that basic freedoms (e.g., **freedom of speech, voting rights**) are protected.

▷ **Second Principle:**
  ▸ Fair Equality of Opportunity: Citizens should have equal chances regardless of birth or wealth.
  ▸ Difference Principle: Social and economic inequalities should be arranged to benefit the **least advantaged.**

Original position | Veil of Ignorance
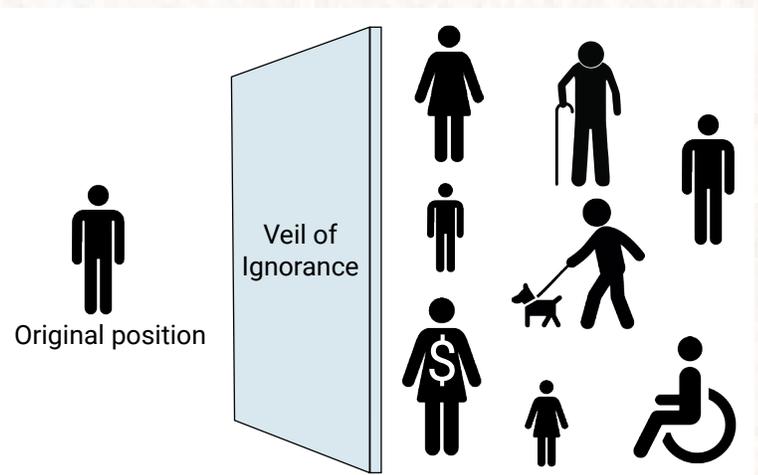
Commentaries...

Norman Barry said that Rawls has applied the **"chain principle"** and argued that weakest link in chain, ie the disadvantaged sections are as important as the strongest chain.

> *"Natural distribution is neither just nor unjust, it is the institution of society controlled by human beings that makes it just or unjust".*
>
> *- Rawls*

25

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

COMMUNITARIAN CRITIQUE OF RAWLSIAN THEORY OF JUSTICE

Michael Sandel: Criticizes Rawls' notion of the unencumbered self. Sandel advocates that the common good of the community takes precedence over individual rights.

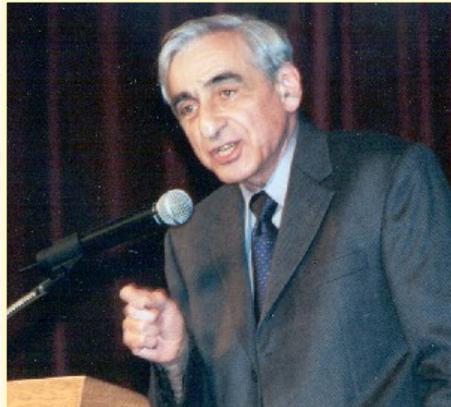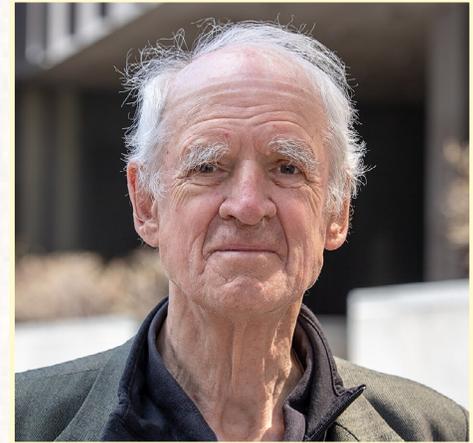**Michael Walzer:** Asserts that justice should be understood through community-specific principles. He argues against universal theories of justice, emphasizing the importance of cultural context.

Charles Taylor: Criticizes Rawls' atomistic conception of the individual. He emphasizes that the well-being of the individual depends on the good of their community.

OTHER CRITIQUE OF RAWLSIAN THEORY OF JUSTICE

Libertarian Critique	**NOZICK** ▷ Robert Nozick's Entitlement Theory: Nozick in his book Anarchy, State and Utopia argues that individuals are entitled to their holdings if they acquired them through legitimate means such as voluntary transactions, labor, or original appropriation. ▷ Nozick's theory has been criticized for overlooking historical injustices and the role of social structures in shaping individuals' resources. **ISAIAH BERLIN** ▷ Value pluralism argues that values are often incommensurable and can't be objectively ranked. Berlin critiques Rawls for giving a lexical order to values (liberty > equality > difference), which contradicts the spirit of value pluralism. *If I own myself then I own my talents and that if I own my talents, I own the products of my self-owned talents.* **- Nozick**
Social Liberals	**AMARTYA SEN** ▷ **CAPABILITY APPROACH OF AMARTYA SEN** 　▸ Capability as Freedom: Sen introduces the concept of capability equality, focusing on the freedom of individuals to achieve what they have reason to value. ▷ **Criticism of Rawls** 　▸ Sen critiques Rawls' theory, stating that it does not sufficiently account for the variability in people's abilities to transform resources into capabilities. 　▸ Sen argues that Rawls focuses too much on just institutions and not on the actual behavior of individuals in a society. Sen believes capability and freedom are more important than primary goods. **DWORKIN** ▷ Rawls' theory fails to distinguish between those worst off due to choices and circumstances. Dworkin argues only those disadvantaged by brute luck (circumstances) should be compensated.
Feminist Critique	▷ Feminists argue that Rawls' individualistic model neglects female qualities such as care, nurturing, and cooperation, which are essential to justice in society. ▷ Susan Moller Okin: Critiques Rawls for not addressing inequalities within the family, asserting that gender and family dynamics play a central role in social justice. ▷ Carole Gilligan's book In a Different Voice emphasized the ethics of care as an alternative to the masculinist idea of justice, which has traditionally dominated political and moral philosophy.

Marxist Critique	▷ They have argued that Rawls's idea of the veil of ignorance is a hypothetical condition as any deliberations without the knowledge of social and economic conditions of each other are meaningless.
	▷ Justice can be analysed in the light of class relations and ownership of private property.

RAWLS'S RESPONSE TO THE CRITIQUE

In his book- Political Liberalism, Rawls engages his critiques and accepts some of his earlier mistakes. In it, he accepts that his earlier theory of justice is not a comprehensive conception of justice but is compatible with a liberal conception of the role of justice. Thus, the theory of justice is a liberal political concept and does not encompass the moral standpoint.
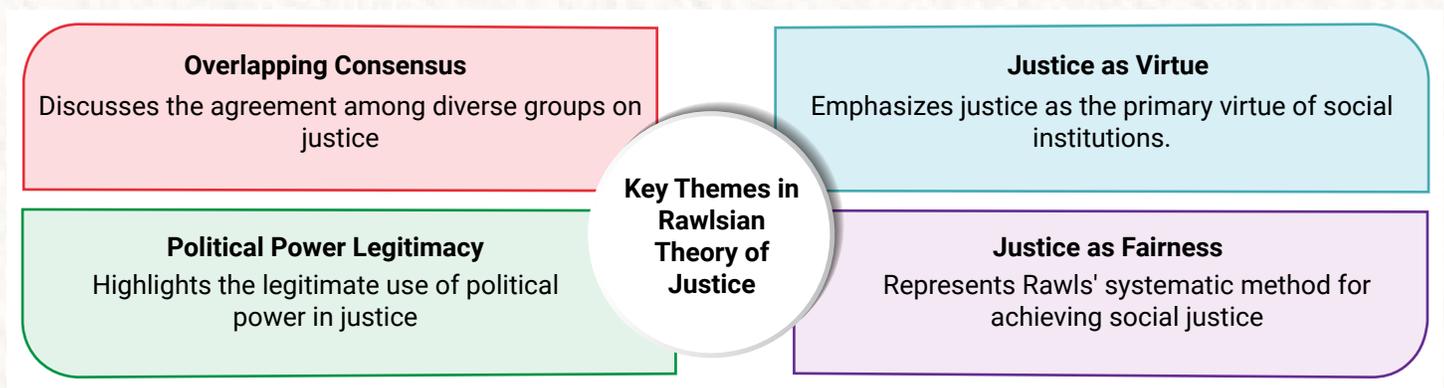
OVERLAPPING CONSENSUS

In the concept of Overlapping consensus, Rawls explains how complex interactions between human beings based on differing viewpoints can be converged to arrive at some common ground.

The citizens despite reasonable pluralism come to respect liberal political institutions and individuals work towards liberal principles from mutually incompatible perspectives and an overlapping consensus is achieved.

Rawls agrees that his theory of justice is not a comprehensive conception of the good but rather is compatible with a liberal conception of justice— that is, the government should be neutral in competitions between two forces of good.

Thus, the following infographic summarises the key themes in The Rawl's Theory of Justice.

Overlapping Consensus
Discusses the agreement among diverse groups on justice

Justice as Virtue
Emphasizes justice as the primary virtue of social institutions.

Key Themes in Rawlsian Theory of Justice

Political Power Legitimacy
Highlights the legitimate use of political power in justice

Justice as Fairness
Represents Rawls' systematic method for achieving social justice

Book Review

1. **Stand Your Ground: Black Bodies and the Justice of God by Kelly Brown Douglas (2015)**

   Douglas views the police killings of Black people as modern-day lynchings, deeply rooted in systemic racism. She connects this to the Christian theology of the cross, arguing that God's justice means freedom from racial domination and the pursuit of liberation and equality.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
   - Racial injustice and theology,
   - Modern lynching,
   - Divine justice as liberation

2. **The Idea of Justice by Amartya Sen (2009)**

   Sen offers a strong critique of Rawls's ideal theory, arguing instead for a practical, comparative approach to justice. He emphasizes real-world inequalities, public reasoning, and democratic participation as key to building a just society.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
   - Comparative justice,
   - Critique of ideal theory,
   - Focus on participation and reasoning

3. **Justice in a Globalized World: A Normative Framework by Laura Valentini (2011)**

   Valentini explores what justice means in a global context. She discusses how distributive justice, human rights, and state responsibilities must be rethought across borders. The book proposes a more balanced and realistic framework for global justice.

27

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

- **Key Ideas:**
  - Global justice,
  - Cross-border responsibilities,
  - Human rights and fairness

4. **Global Justice and Avant-Garde Political Agency by Lea Ypi (2012)**

   Ypi focuses on how justice can be achieved through activism. She highlights the role of avant-garde political movements in challenging power structures and promoting global justice. The book connects collective action with the fight for fairness in a globalized world.
   - **Key Ideas:**
     - Activism and justice,
     - Challenging global power,
     - Avant-garde political agency

Introduction for the Answers

▷ The concept of justice has been a core concern for political philosophers from Plato to Amartya Sen. John Rawls famously described justice as "the first virtue of social institutions."

▷ John Rawls was a social liberal and liberal egalitarian. He famously described justice as "the first virtue of social institutions, just as truth is the first virtue of any system of thought."

▷ The rise of social movements like feminism and civil rights challenged existing political theories. Behavioralism failed to address these movements, leading to Rawls' theory of justice in 1971, which revitalized political philosophy by offering a deeper understanding of justice and equality.

Interlinkages

▷ Rawls' justice as fairness aligns with liberal ideals, focusing on individual rights and equality. His work extends classical liberalism by emphasizing economic redistribution to benefit the least advantaged, offering a modern take on social liberalism.

▷ While Rawls' theory advocates for justice as fairness, it contrasts with Marxism, which aims for the abolition of class inequality. Rawls accepts inequality, but only if it benefits the least advantaged, which Marxists would critique.

▷ Feminists, including Susan Okin, critique Rawls' veil of ignorance, arguing that it ignores gender inequality. They suggest that a fair distribution of goods must account for gender-specific injustices in society, especially in domestic settings.

▷ In his later works, such as The Law of Peoples, Rawls extends his theory to global justice, arguing that principles of justice should apply to international relations, emphasizing fairness and equality in dealings between nations.

▷ Ambedkar's vision of social justice resonates with Rawls' difference principle, advocating for affirmative action to uplift marginalized groups. Both thinkers aim for structural reforms to promote equality in society. (This concept should be used in the answers of IGP where affirmative action is involved.)

▷ Rawls' difference principle ties directly to redistribution of wealth in the political economy. His theory challenges market capitalism by advocating for policies that favor the least advantaged, ensuring economic equality and social justice.

▷ Rawls' theory of justice, particularly his difference principle, emphasizes prioritizing the least disadvantaged, a concept that resonates with Gandhi's talisman and Deendayal Upadhyaya's Antyodaya, both advocating for the welfare of the last person in the social ladder.

▷ Rawls' conception of justice focuses on fairness, emphasizing equality and the protection of the least advantaged through the Difference Principle. In contrast, Plato views justice as societal harmony, where individuals fulfill roles based on their abilities. Aristotle focuses on distributing goods according to merit, aiming for proportional fairness.

28

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Progressive Taxation and Welfare Policies**
  ‣ Rawls' difference principle supports progressive taxation and welfare policies that aim to reduce economic inequalities. Democracies use this model to redistribute wealth, ensuring that social programs benefit the poorest, fostering a fairer society.

▷ **Global Inequality and Development**
  ‣ In a global context, Rawls' theory addresses international justice, advocating for equitable trade and financial systems that assist developing countries. His principles can guide global efforts to reduce inequality and improve the conditions of the world's poorest.

▷ **Affirmative Action and Social Equality**
  ‣ Rawls' model justifies affirmative action policies in areas like education and employment. His emphasis on benefiting the least advantaged aligns with modern efforts to address systemic inequalities faced by marginalized communities, including racial and gender-based disparities.

▷ **Healthcare and Social Safety Nets**
  ‣ In the context of healthcare, Rawls' principle supports universal access to medical services. Welfare states, like those in Scandinavia, utilize Rawls' ideas to ensure that basic rights to health and well-being are available to all, especially the disadvantaged.

▷ **Climate Justice and Environmental Ethics**
  ‣ Rawls' framework is relevant to climate justice, as it promotes policies that prioritize the least advantaged. Developing nations, which suffer the most from climate change, can draw from Rawls' principles to advocate for equitable environmental solutions and financial aid.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Nozick, a critic of Rawls, acknowledges his influence, calling him a reference point for contemporary political philosophers. Rawls' theory of justice has indeed marked the golden age in theorizing about justice, challenging classical ideas.

▷ Amartya Sen's critique of Rawls' theory brings a human capability dimension to justice. While Rawls' model is foundational, Sen expands it by highlighting the importance of real freedoms in achieving justice, making it more inclusive.

▷ Rawls' theory, particularly the difference principle, remains a cornerstone of modern debates on social justice, influencing policies like progressive taxation, affirmative action, and welfare systems in democratic societies striving for equality.

29

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Unit 4: EQUALITY

> *"Equality is basically a process of equalization. So, first of all equality implies the deficiency of special rights. Secondly, it implies that everyone should get enough opportunities for growth."*
>
> *- Harold Laski*

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

- The nature of the relationship between equality of democratic citizenship and liberty of citizens is influenced by economic equality. Comment. 2024/15M
- Affirmative Action Policies draw as much strong criticism as strong support. Analyze this statement in the context of equality. 2023/15M
- "Equality of estates causes equality of power, and equality of power is liberty." Comment. (2022)
- Comment: Equality of opportunity. (2020)
- Equality means fair treatment rather than equal treatment. Comment. (2018)
- Comment on: Affirmative Action. (2016, 2021)
- How is liberty a precondition for equality? Explicate the relationship between equality and liberty. (2014)
- Difference between equality of opportunity and equality of outcome. (2012)
- Why is 'affirmative action' important in provision of equal opportunity? (2012)

Insights from PYQs

The questions explore the relationship between **equality** and **liberty**, particularly how **economic equality** influences democratic citizenship. Debates around **affirmative action** highlighting the tension between equality of opportunity and equality of outcome have been asked. The notion of equality of estates as a means to achieve liberty is a recurring theme, alongside discussions on whether fair treatment is preferable to equal treatment. The ongoing analysis of affirmative action underscores its significance in addressing systemic inequalities and fostering equal opportunities.

Introduction

The idea of equality is the central feature of modern political thought. Equality is a fundamental value in democratic societies and is often considered a cornerstone of social justice. Classical and Medieval thinkers considered hierarchy as natural and inevitable while Modern thinkers started with the assumption that all human beings have equal moral worth. Today Equality is a highly complex concept; there are as many forms of equality as there are ways of comparing the conditions of human existence.

Meaning of Equality

Dworkin: Equality is a sovereign virtue. He believes that "No other value has been under threat in Liberalism as the value of equality". He has highlighted that equality is more fundamental than liberty. Liberty is hollow in absence of equality.

Barker: "The principle of equality, accordingly, means that whatever conditions are guaranteed to me in the form of rights shall also and in the same measure be guaranteed to others and that whatever rights are given to others shall also be given to me".

30

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Isaiah Berlin: Human dignity/ equality is considered as the core of liberalism.

Harold Laski:
▷ Absence of special privileges.
▷ Adequate opportunities are laid open to all to realise the implications of one's own personality.
▷ All must have access to social benefits, and no one should be restricted on any ground.
▷ Absence of economic and social exploitation.

Dimensions of Equality

Dimensions	Descriptions
Legal Equality	**Equality before law:** Equal subjection of all classes to the ordinary law of the land (negative concept). **Equal protection of law:** Right to equal treatment in similar circumstances. Equal protection requires affirmative action by the state in favour of disadvantaged sections of the society.
Political Equality	Political equality is associated with democratic institutions and the right to participate in the political process. It includes- right to vote, right to contest elections, right to freedom of speech and expression, etc. Political equality means the authority which exerts that power must be subject to rules of democratic governance (Laski).
Social Equality	The economic equality of early liberals was equality of choosing one's trade or profession irrespective of his caste, creed or economic status. Economic equality is two folds: ▷ It is a matter of status. ▷ It is a matter of property and income.
Economic Equality	Social equality focuses on ensuring equal opportunities for all to develop their personalities. It involves eliminating any form of discrimination based on factors such as caste, creed, religion, language, race, gender, etc. Social equality also depends on accessibility of public services, education, health etc on equal basis to facilitate social mobility.

EVOLUTION OF CONCEPT OF EQUALITY

▷ View of Aristotle: Inequality was a cause of rebellion; justice means treating equals equally and unequals unequally.
▷ Medieval Feudalism: Legal privileges based on status, birth, race, sex, religion, military strength, wealth, and knowledge.
▷ Renaissance Period: Puritans, Levellers, and natural rights proponents (John Locke) raised calls for equality against landowners' status and religious intolerance.
▷ Modern Times: Equality became fundamental in organizing human life; legal, economic, and social equality demanded by liberal socialists and Marxists (J.S. Mill, T.H. Green, Karl Marx).
▷ National Movements: In the 20th century, equality demands grew with national liberation movements and socialist revolutions (Russia, China).
▷ UDHR 1948: Universal Declaration of Human Rights recognized equality globally, leading to the rise of international society based on socio-economic equality.
▷ Today: Equality is a foundational principle in modern constitutions, recognized as both a human and fundamental right.

31

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Equality: Fair Treatment Vs Equal Treatment

Equal Treatment	Fair Treatment
▷ **Equal treatment** implies that all people have the right to receive the same treatment, irrespective of circumstances.	▷ **Fair treatment** implies that people will receive **differential treatment** based on their **circumstances or needs.**
▷ **Libertarians** like **Nozick** advocate **equal treatment,** arguing that **"unjustly taking someone's holdings for redistribution violates their rights".**	▷ **Rawls** acknowledged equality as **fair treatment** and advocated the **difference principle,** which aims to **make disadvantaged individuals better off.**
▷ Nozick speaks against **"Progressive taxation"** and compares it to **bonded labour,** which he views as unjust treatment of the rich.	▷ **Rawls** justifies **discrimination** to establish **Democratic equality** between **Liberty and Equality.**
▷ **Equal treatment alone** does not create equality in society, as people have **different starting points** due to **historical discrimination.**	▷ **Dworkin** advocates for **Resource Egalitarianism,** emphasizing that internal inequalities (e.g., **disabilities**) should also be addressed.
▷ For example, **Dalits in India, Blacks in the USA,** or **Women** face historical inequality.	▷ **Amartya Sen** (capability approach) argues that **equal treatment** is insufficient as people differ in their **abilities** to convert equal resources into **functioning**.
▷ **Positive discrimination** is necessary to ensure **fair treatment** and address these disparities.	

Equality of Welfare

This principle is advocated by the **utilitarians**. It emphasizes the **fair distribution of resources,** benefits, and services in society to reduce disparities and promote a sense of **well-being** (pleasure) among all members of the community. The idea is that people should be made equal in terms of welfare or happiness.

Dworkin finds this principle illogical. He counters it with a story about two sisters—one has a simple lifestyle, and the other has a lavish one. To keep their **pleasure** equal, the second sister would need to be given **more resources** to match the pleasure. Dworkin argues that this distribution does not appear to be **logical** or **just**.

Dworkin's Theory of Equality of Resources

Dworkin's theory of equality of resources offers a perspective on **distributive justice** that focuses on providing individuals with equal resources rather than equal outcomes or opportunities. The aim is to ensure that individuals have necessary resources to pursue their own goals and lead a life they value.

This theory is given by **Dworkin (Egalitarian).** He is inspired by **Rawls' theory of justice,** and he criticises **Nozick's entitlement theory.**

> **AUCTION THEORY BY DWORKIN**
> Dworkin's idea is to organize an **auction** in which each person receives a **hundred shells.** The one hundred **shipwrecked people** will be auctioned off with their shells and there are a number of **lots** to be auctioned off. In front of each of the lots, each will put the **number of shells** he is willing to use to finance his desire.

▷ **Entitlement theory:** It limits the role of the state to regulation, rectification, and grievance redressal. But it has no role in distributive justice. He justifies complete entitlement of man's property. Nozick believes that **people should be held responsible for the choices they make.**

▷ **Dworkin's Theory:** People should be held responsible for the choices they make, but only the choices they made under **chosen circumstances** and **not** under **unchosen circumstances.** However, he suggests that a person should be compensated only once, not again and again. Hence, Dworkin suggests the idea of **just initial distribution.**

▷ **Just Distribution:** Dworkin in his book **"Sovereign Virtue"** has prescribed **envy test or jealousy** test for that. He explains his idea with the help of a story of a *wrecked ship near an island.* Resources Equality means the possibility of having equitable resources so that everyone can carry out their conception of what is good or wellbeing. As per Dworkin's idea, there will be no inequality and no monopoly. The end of the auction will be considered fair as long as each person does not envy the other's endowment.

32

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

- **Optional luck and Brute luck:** In **Optional luck,** the risks are taken through rational choices and hence the disadvantages are a person's own choice. But in Brute luck, a person has no choice such as being born in a lower caste in India. Here, we have to be conscious about **brute luck** and the state will have some kind of role. This whole concept is known as **Luck Egalitarianism.**

- **Dworkin's equality of resources** asserts that a just distribution of rights and responsibilities occurs when it stems from individuals' **free choices** following an initial distribution of resources that is strictly equal, complemented by **insurance coverage** to mitigate natural disadvantages.

Sen's Theory of Equality of Capabilities

It is a concept that focuses on the enhancement of individuals' **freedom** and opportunities to lead lives they value. It emphasizes the importance of not only **equal access to resources** but also **equal capability** to use those resources effectively to achieve well-being and pursue one's own goals.

The idea goes beyond the theory of **equality of resources** because even when we give equal resources, it is not necessary that we achieve equality, as people differ in terms of **capabilities.**

Two Distinctive Features of Capability Approach:

- **Social Choice:** It considers **real persons.** In reality, different persons may suffer from different types of deprivations. It also takes into account **social factors.** For example, as **girls** face more deprivation in India, **equal resources** may not give an equal sense of well-being to **girls and boys.**

- **Realization-Focused Approach:** According to **Sen**, the purpose of life is **happiness** or **well-being.** He gives the concept of **being** and **doing**. **Being** means existence, i.e., a person should realize her importance and must get respect from others. **Doing** means a person does what she wants to do (e.g., **fasting** is a choice and **hunger** is a deprivation).

Thus, the **capability approach** does not look at people as a means of **economic growth,** but it considers people as the **end** of economic growth or **development**. **Sen** defines development in terms of **freedom** and freedom in terms of **capabilities** or **functioning** mention the critique of the Capability approach.

Affirmative Action

Affirmative action refers to policies and practices that are designed to address **historical and ongoing inequalities, discrimination**, and **underrepresentation** experienced by certain **disadvantaged** or **marginalized groups.**

It is an approach taken by **governments, organizations,** and **institutions** to promote **equal opportunities** and increase **representation** for individuals who have historically faced **discrimination** (Ex- **Blacks in USA** and **Dalits in India**) based on characteristics such as **race, gender, ethnicity,** or **disability.**

Equality of Outcome

Equality of outcome, also known as **outcome equality** or **distributive equality,** refers to the principle that individuals should have **equal outcomes** or results in terms of **resources, wealth, opportunities,** and other factors. It suggests that society should strive to ensure that everyone has an **equal share** or level of various goods and benefits, regardless of their starting point or individual contributions.

The idea of **equality of outcome** is the most **radical** and **controversial** face of egalitarianism. Defenders of **equality of outcome** believe that the guarantee of all other equalities would be inadequate so long as **equality of outcome** is not ensured.

Criticism

Stagnation and Injustice: Critics argue that equality of outcome leads to stagnation, injustice, and potentially tyranny.

Hayek's View: Hayek claims that people differ in aspirations and goals, and any system treating them equally actually causes inequality.

Undermines Dignity: Imposing socialist egalitarian measures is said to undermine the individual's dignity and self-respect.

Feasibility Concerns: Critics raise concerns about its feasibility, as well as disincentives to productivity, individual effort, and potential infringements on individual liberty and property rights.

33

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Equality of Opportunity

Equality of opportunity advocates that every individual should have an equal chance to succeed, regardless of their characteristics or circumstance. It emphasizes the importance of removing barriers, biases, and systemic inequalities that can limit opportunities for certain groups or individuals.

- **Plato's Concept of Social Position:** The idea of equal opportunity can be traced to the works of Plato, who proposed that social position should be based strictly upon individual ability and effort. Social democrats and modern liberals believe that such equal opportunity is the cornerstone of social justice.
- **Equal Starting Point, Not Equal Outcomes:** In a society upholding equality of opportunity, individuals are not guaranteed equal outcomes, but rather an equal starting point. The focus is on creating conditions that enable individuals to compete based on their own merits, talents, and efforts.
- **Meritocratic Inegalitarian Ideal:** Equality of opportunity points towards a meritocratic inegalitarian ideal. because everyone started equally, unequal outcomes are acceptable and legitimized. The underlying assumption is that so long as the competition has been fair, advantage itself is beyond criticism.
- **Challenges in Implementation:** However, challenges remain in translating the principle into practice, as deeply entrenched social, economic, and cultural factors can perpetuate disparities and limit equal opportunities for marginalized or disadvantaged groups.

Freedom, Liberty and Equality

Liberty and equality are considered as antithetical to each other, as attempts to establish equality imply coercion and loss of liberty. Early liberal thinkers like **Locke, Adam Smith, Bentham, James Mill,** and **Tocqueville** felt that there should be minimum restrictions on the liberty of the individual. **De Tocqueville** considers equality as a danger for liberty.

- Early liberals believed that **no individual will voluntarily give up wealth and privileges.** As a result, programmes of social equalisation must interfere with the democratic rights of the individual. In the modern era this view is supported by scholars like **Nozick, Hayek, Milton Friedman,** etc.
- Even supporters of elite theory of democracy believe that liberty and equality are incompatible as they allow only elites to participate in democratic processes.
- However, **Positive liberals** maintained that liberty and equality are complementary to each other, and the state was assigned the task of correcting the social and economic imbalances through legislation and regulation.
- **Rousseau, T.H. Green, Hobhouse, Barker, Laski, Macpherson,** etc. are of the view that Inequality in the access to the resources and essential services such as education will have adverse effects on the liberty of individuals and can be a limitation on the individual's ability to lead a meaningful life.

In contemporary times, theories like **Rawls' difference principle, Sen's capability approach** and **Dworkin's equality of resources** are an attempt to establish a complementary relationship between equality and liberty.

Complex Equality

It is a theory of justice propounded by **Michael Walzer** (Book- Spheres of Justice). It is considered innovative because it covers not only tangible goods but also **abstract goods** such as **rights**. However, it allows certain **inequalities** in social goods.

- **Basic Premise:** The basic premise of the theory is that inequalities in one sphere of society should not invade the other sphere.
- **Walzer's Words:** In Walzer's words, "In formal terms, complex equality means that no citizen's standing in one sphere or with regard to one social good can be undercut by his standing in some other sphere, with regard to some other good."
- **Practical Issues:** However, in **practice**, the principle is difficult to implement as a person dominant in the **economic sphere** will use his **resources** to gain prominence in the **political sphere** (for example, in **elections in India** where elections are fought on the basis of **money** and **muscle power**).

Book Review

1. **The Ideological Origins of Inequality by Michael J. Thompson (2020)**

   Thompson critiques the ideologies that support inequality. He argues that many unjust systems are deeply embedded in society's structures. The book explains how ideologies shape how people understand justice, equality, and fairness, often hiding the real causes of inequality.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
   - Systemic inequality,
   - Ideological manipulation,
   - Perceptions of justice and fairness

2. **The Meritocracy Trap by Daniel Markovits (2019)**

   Markovits challenges the idea that meritocracy leads to fairness. He argues that it actually strengthens elite privilege, reduces social mobility, and harms the middle class. The book shows how the promise of equal opportunity often turns into a system of hidden exclusion.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
   - Myth of meritocracy,
   - Elite dominance,
   - Decline of the middle class

3. **The New Jim Crow: Mass Incarceration in the Age of Colorblindness by Michelle Alexander (2020, Updated Edition)**

   Alexander shows how mass incarceration in the U.S. is a form of racial control, similar to the old Jim Crow laws. She explains how systemic racism continues under the appearance of being race-neutral, especially affecting Black communities.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
   - Mass incarceration,
   - Systemic racism,
   - Racial justice

4. **The Undocumented Americans by Karla Cornejo Villavicencio (2020)**

   This book tells the real-life stories of undocumented immigrants in the U.S. It shows the social and economic inequalities they face and argues for immigration reform that ensures justice and dignity for all.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
   - Immigration inequality,
   - Hidden struggles,
   - Call for policy reform

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **Equality of Estates and Power:** Hegel and Marx suggest that equality of estates is key to power distribution. Ensuring equal power leads to liberty, fostering a just society where each individual can exercise freedom and rights.

▷ **Equality of Opportunity:** Rawls' **"Theory of Justice"** advocates for equal opportunities as a cornerstone of justice. Ensuring equal access to resources, education, and positions allows individuals to achieve their fullest potential, irrespective of their background.

▷ **Fair Treatment vs. Equal Treatment:** Dworkin's concept of "equality of resources" emphasizes fair treatment over equal treatment. It acknowledges that equal resources alone may not lead to equal outcomes due to varying individual circumstances.

▷ **Affirmative Action:** Affirmative action is rooted in **Rawls' Difference Principle** and it aims to correct historical injustices by promoting equal opportunities for marginalized groups, ensuring they can compete on an equal footing in society.

▷ Equality, though defined as the **"absence of privilege,"** remains a **contested concept** in political science due to its multiple interpretations, including formal equality, moral equality, and equality of resources, welfare, and opportunity.

35

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Interlinkages

▷ Rawls' **Difference Principle** aligns with **equality** by justifying economic disparities only if they benefit the least advantaged, promoting a more **equitable** and **just society.**

▷ **Equality and Feminist Theory of State: Radical feminism** critiques the state's inherent **patriarchy**, advocating for **equality** of treatment and restructuring societal norms, emphasizing gender **equality** within the state framework.

▷ **Marxist theory** stresses **economic equality** as essential to **eliminate class disparities.** It critiques **capitalism** for perpetuating inequality, advocating for resource redistribution to achieve true equality.

▷ **Equality and Political Philosophy:** In democratic theory, equality links to **political equality,** where the right to participate in governance ensures equal influence over **state decisions,** fostering an inclusive democratic process.

▷ Post-colonial theory critiques the **historical inequalities** of **colonialism**, urging for **economic and social equality** in **post-colonial societies,** addressing the enduring effects of colonial exploitation on marginalized communities.

▷ **Equality and Indian Political Thought (IGP):** B.R. Ambedkar's concept of **equality** emphasizes **social justice** for marginalized groups like **Dalits**, challenging caste-based **inequality** and establishing equality as a cornerstone of Indian **democratic** thought.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Affirmative Action Policies:** Modern **affirmative action** policies, such as reservation quotas in India and **affirmative action** in the United States, continue to address **historical inequalities,** promoting **equality of opportunity** for marginalized communities.

▷ **Global Gender Equality Initiatives:** Global movements like **#MeToo** and **UN Women's advocacy** for gender equality highlight the ongoing struggle for **equal treatment** and **rights,** particularly focusing on **equal pay, reproductive rights,** and **gender-based violence.**

▷ **Economic Inequality and Tax Reforms:** The rise in **global economic inequality** has led to debates about **wealth redistribution** through **progressive taxation** policies, reflecting the **egalitarian ideals** of Rawls' **Difference Principle—** where inequalities are justified only if they benefit the least advantaged.

▷ **Equality and Digital Access:** The growing focus on **digital inclusion** to bridge the **digital divide** in education, healthcare, and employment reflects a **modern interpretation** of **equality**. Governments and NGOs are working to ensure equal access to technology for disadvantaged groups, supporting **social equality and economic development.**

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Equality remains a foundational value in **democratic governance.** Policies ensuring **political, economic,** and **social equality** are essential for creating inclusive societies, where all individuals can equally participate in public life.

▷ Despite legal frameworks ensuring **equality, disparities** in access to resources, **economic inequalities,** and **social discrimination** persist. True **equality** demands continuous **social reforms** and **affirmative action** to address these challenges.

▷ Laski and MacPherson argue that **equality** and **liberty** are complementary. Laski contended that restricting **equality** in the name of **liberty** misinterprets the true essence of **freedom**, which requires equality for all.

▷ The global fight for **gender equality, racial justice,** and **economic rights** highlights that equality is an ongoing struggle, requiring **international cooperation** and **policy changes** to address the injustices of the past.

Unit 5: RIGHTS

"Rights are those conditions of social life without which no man can seek in general, to be himself at his best."

- Harold Laski

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

⊕ **Multicultural perspective on rights. Comment. (2023)**

⊕ **Human rights are complex and contested social practices that organize relations between individuals, society, and the State. Comment. (2022)**

⊕ **Can there be a universal conception of human rights? Give your arguments. (2021)**

⊕ **Discuss the doctrine of 'rights as trumps'. (2019)**

⊕ **What do you understand about three generations of Human Rights? (2018)**

⊕ **"The implementation of human rights is regarded as a matter of changing the conduct of States." Comment. (2016)**

⊕ **Comment on: Idea of Natural Rights. (2015)**

⊕ **Analyse the relationship between natural rights and human rights. (2013)**

⊕ **Examine the multi-cultural perspectives on rights. (2012)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions explore diverse perspectives on **human rights,** including **multicultural** views and debates on **universalism** versus cultural relativism. The idea of **rights as trumps** and the **three generations** of **human rights** feature prominently, highlighting the evolution of rights across time. The relationship between **natural rights** and human rights is also a critical area of focus, with an emphasis on how human rights shape relations between the **individual, society,** and the **State**. The contested nature of rights underscores their dynamic role in global political discourse.

Introduction

Rights are entitlements that determine permissible actions and states, both for individuals and others. They play a crucial role in shaping our understanding of **justice** and form the basis for **governments, laws,** and **morality**. Accepting a set of rights implies endorsing a particular distribution of **freedom** and **authority**, and aligning with a specific perspective on what is **permissible, required,** or **prohibited.**

What is Right?

A right is essentially a justified **claim** or **entitlement** that defines what an individual is morally or legally entitled to. Historically, in **medieval times,** the theory of the **Divine Right of Kings** dominated, granting rulers absolute authority. However, this was later replaced by the theory of **Natural Rights** of Man, which was more anti-statist, advocating for inherent rights independent of government control.

Rights can be understood in various forms:

▷ as a **claim on entitlement,** ensuring individuals have certain privileges;

▷ as **liberty**, which allows freedom from interference;

▷ as **power**, giving individuals the ability to act or influence others; and

▷ as **immunity**, protecting individuals from external interference or harm.

37

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

These evolving concepts highlight the modern shift toward recognizing individual rights as fundamental to human dignity and justice.

Ronald Dworkin, in his book *Taking Rights Seriously,* calls rights "**Trumps**", meaning individual rights should take precedence over any other considerations, including those of the **community or state.** Dworkin argues that certain rights, such as **freedom of speech,** must be protected by the constitution and cannot be taken away, even if it benefits the majority.

Laski on Rights

According to Laski, *"Rights are those conditions without which no man can seek in general to be at his best."* Every **state** is defined by the **rights** it upholds. The performance of the state is judged based on its contribution to **human welfare** and **happiness**.

Laski argues that a **social order** not based on the **claims of individuals** is built on **sand**. Therefore, the **state** should control **industries**, or else industries will control the **state**.

These rights are inviolable and should not be sacrificed for the greater good. Dworkin stresses that rights should not be subject to **weighing** in every situation, as this undermines the very concept of individual rights, much like Mill's absolute right to freedom of speech.

Theory of Natural Rights

The theory of natural rights is one of the oldest theories of the rights of man, primarily rooted in the thoughts of John Locke. As stated in the American Declaration of Independence, natural rights are considered "self-evident truths." Every person has the right to life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness, given to them by God. These rights have a theological origin and are similar to the divine rights of kings.

Natural rights are fundamental to human existence, and individuals cannot be deprived of their basic rights. This theory holds an absolutist view of human rights.

Two schools of thought emerged within the Natural Rights tradition:

▷ Social Contract Tradition (Locke and Rousseau): Locke believed that man enjoyed natural rights in the state of nature. Reason guides man to not harm others in their life, liberty, health, and property, and these rights have not been transferred to the state.

▷ Teleological Tradition (Thomas Paine, TH Green): Unlike the social contract tradition, this perspective sees the social contract as illogical and unjustifiable for successive generations. According to Paine, man is distinct from animals and should possess certain rights that allow him to live as a human, emphasizing teleology (purpose-driven rights).

Criticism

Theory of Legal Rights (Hobbes and Bentham)

Hobbes and Bentham argue that in the state of nature, man had power but not rights, as rights only emerge with the establishment of the state. Bentham criticizes natural rights, calling them "rhetorical nonsense upon stilts" and dismisses them as dogmatic, unintelligible, and anarchical.

Conservative Theory of Rights (Edmund Burke)

Edmund Burke contends that rights are products of customs and traditions, and without societal sanction, they are meaningless. He criticizes natural rights as metaphysical abstractions and argues for gradual reform rather than radical change. This view is supported by communitarians, who reject abstract individualism.

Human Rights

Human Rights are fundamental moral claims that all individuals possess simply because they are **human beings.** These rights are **inalienable**, meaning no **government** or person can take them away.

According to **Thomas Paine** in his book *Rights of Man,* human rights are those to which people are entitled by virtue of being human. These rights are **essential** for maintaining human dignity and freedom. They include areas of **individual** or **group freedom** that are protected from interference by the **state** or any other authority. These rights cannot be **deprived** or **violated**, ensuring that everyone has access to the basic conditions necessary to live a dignified life.

Human rights form the foundation for justice and equality in society, guaranteeing everyone the opportunity to live freely without the fear of oppression.

38

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Origin and Purpose of Human Rights	Shift from Sovereignty to International Intervention	Adoption of the UDHR
Human rights are principles aimed at protecting individuals from severe political, legal, and social abuses. The concept emerged after **World War II,** largely in response to the atrocities committed by Hitler against the Jews.	Before **WWII**, the principle of state sovereignty was inviolable, and international intervention in domestic affairs was rare. However, following the **atrocities of the war,** it became clear that the international community must play a role in protecting individuals' rights, especially when a state itself violates them.	In 1948, the **Universal Declaration of Human Rights (UDHR)** was adopted by the international community. The UDHR draws upon **Locke's theory of natural rights** and **Kant's concept of human dignity,** serving as a milestone in the global recognition of human rights.

Three Generation of Human Rights

Karel Vasak (1979) outlined **three generations of human rights,** which are as follows:

First Generation of Human Rights: Civil and Political Rights	Second Generation of Human Rights: Socio-Economic and Cultural Rights	Third Generation of Human Rights: Group and Solidarity Rights
These rights include fundamental **civil** and **political** freedoms that protect the individual's autonomy. They are primarily **negative** rights, limiting government power over individuals. These rights include: ▷ Right to life and liberty ▷ Right to security ▷ Freedom from slavery ▷ Freedom of movement ▷ Right to freedom of speech and expression ▷ Right to religious freedom ▷ Right to vote and participation in political processes, etc. These rights are enshrined in **Articles 3 to 21 of the UDHR** and the **International Covenant on Civil and Political Rights** (1966).	These rights emphasize **positive obligations** on governments to ensure the well-being of their citizens, particularly in the social and economic spheres. Their realization depends on the **availability of resources.** These rights include: ▷ Right to food and work ▷ Right to a minimum wage ▷ Right to rest ▷ Right to education ▷ Right to protect/ conserve one's culture and heritage, etc. These rights are covered in **Articles 22 to 28 of the UDHR** and the **International Covenant on Economic, Social, and Cultural Rights.**	These rights focus on **collective** interests and are also known as **green rights** or **soft laws.** They include **group** and **solidarity rights,** which recognize the importance of communities and collective interests. These rights include: ▷ Right to self-determination ▷ Right to development ▷ Right to a healthy environment ▷ Communication rights ▷ Right to participate in cultural heritage, etc. These rights represent a broader scope of human rights, addressing the needs of **groups** rather than just individuals.

The 4th generation of human rights addresses emerging issues in the digital and technological age. It includes the right to **privacy** in the digital world, **internet access,** and protection from **cybercrimes.** These rights aim to safeguard individuals from the potential dangers of digital surveillance and the misuse of personal data.

Additionally, the 4th generation focuses on ethical concerns surrounding **artificial intelligence, genetic modification,** and **biotechnology**. As technology advances, there is a need for new frameworks to ensure that individuals' dignity, autonomy, and security are protected, reflecting the challenges of an interconnected world.

Implementation of Human Rights

The promotion and safeguarding of human rights by individual states are inherently influenced by a range of internal and external factors that prompt modifications in the behavior of states.

▷ **Adoption of UDHR, 1948:** States were morally compelled by an obligation to grant protection to human rights (civil, political, and socio-economic) of individuals.

▷ **Rise of Civil Society:** The behavior of nation-states underwent a transformation as non-state actors, recognized as intermediaries for the people, gained acceptance. Organizations such as **Amnesty International** exerted pressure on the state to address human rights abuses.

Challenges in the Implementation of Human Rights

▷ The definition of "**human**" remains unclear, creating concerns about who qualifies for human rights. For example, should **terrorists** be considered human and entitled to these rights?

▷ In developing countries, there is a challenge in balancing **state sovereignty** with the need to protect **human rights.** States must adjust policies to safeguard rights like protecting children from **labor**.

▷ States must also be cautious about overemphasizing **human rights** and recognize their essential role in upholding them. They should be fully committed to ensuring the protection and effective **implementation of human rights.**

Debates on Human Rights

"**Human rights**" is one of the most energetic ideas of our times. There is almost universal acceptance with respect to the necessity of protection of human rights. However, beyond that, the idea of human rights is highly contested.

Theoretical Debates

Definition of human: Scholars lack consensus on the basic definition of human. And the most contested issue is whether terrorists can be regarded as human and whether they should be given basic minimum rights.

When human life begins: It is unclear whether human life begins after the birth or in the womb of the mother. There is also debate over abortion rights in many Catholic countries.

Who should be the guardian of Human Rights: States are considered to be the principal protectors of human rights of individuals. But, since the idea of human rights is anti-state, the powers of the state are weakened. Hence, states go for moral guarantees, but in reality, they are unable to deliver.

PHILOSOPHICAL DEBATES

1. VALUE PLURALISM BY ISAIAH BERLIN

Isaiah Berlin is a supporter of negative liberty. He defines liberty in terms of absence of external interference. He is a pluralist and suggests that toleration rather than liberty is the core value or substantive heart of liberalism.

▷ **Against Universalism:** Berlin argued that there is a fundamental and irreducible plurality of values, meaning that different values are inherently incommensurable and may conflict with one another. According to Berlin, there is no single universal value or set of values that can serve as an ultimate guide for human conduct.

▷ **Toleration as the heart of Liberalism:** Berlin's value pluralism emerged as a response to moral and political theories that sought to establish a single, comprehensive set of values or a grand moral theory. He criticized such "monist" or "totalitarian" approaches that aimed to reduce all values to a single principle, such as happiness, justice, or equality. So, he recommends the principle of toleration.

▷ **Respecting the diversity of values:** Instead, Berlin emphasized the importance of recognizing and respecting the diversity of human values. He believed that different individuals and communities hold a variety of legitimate and often conflicting values, which cannot be reduced or ranked hierarchically. Berlin argued that attempts to impose a single set of values on society risked suppressing individual liberty and leading to tyranny.

2. MULTICULTURALISM

Multiculturalism emerged out of the Liberal-Communitarian debate. Bhikhu Parekh (Book- Rethinking Multiculturalism) believes that multiculturalism lies between monism and pluralism. It involves a dynamic interaction between the cultural context in which humans exist, cultural diversity, and the diverse and multicultural makeup of each society.

MULTICULTURALISM AS A CHALLENGE TO LIBERALISM

Multiculturalism challenges traditional liberalism, which emphasizes equal treatment under the law and often overlooks diverse cultural and social identities. The core tension lies in multiculturalism's push for recognizing and preserving cultural diversity, which contrasts with liberalism's focus on individual equal rights and a unified national culture.

40

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

KEY FEATURES OF MULTICULTURALISM

▷ **Differentiated equality:** The formal and difference-blind idea of universal citizenship is criticized by the multiculturalists, and they call it "not real." They advocate for recognition of differences and genuine treatment of equality in multicultural societies. There is a need for recognition of group-specific and minority rights.

▷ **Limitations of liberalism:** Supporters of multiculturalism contend that the principles of neutrality and liberal equality are insufficient in fostering equality for both minority cultural communities and their individual members.

▷ **Autonomy and freedom: Will Kymlicka** (Book- *Multicultural Citizenship*) has argued that liberalism does not simply value individual autonomy and freedom to make choices. Autonomy and freedom are valued only because they enable individuals to reflect upon the beliefs and institutions that they have inherited.

▷ **Rights for culture:** Kymlicka suggests that it is necessary to have special minority rights to protect and promote liberal ethos. Group-differentiated rights such as land claims and language rights can help in alleviating the vulnerability of minority cultures and their differences.

▷ **Differentiated Citizenship:** Multiculturalism rejects the idea of universal citizenship and calls it color-blindness. Universal citizenship believes in homogeneity, and it eclipses group differences. Hence, differentiated citizenship is devised to reject fears of the assimilation of minorities and give them cultural security. However, Kymlicka makes a distinction between national minorities and immigrants, and he limits the special rights only to the national minorities.

BHIKHU PAREKH (POST-COLONIAL PERSPECTIVE)

Bhikhu Parekh (book- *Rethinking Multiculturalism*) rejects Kymlicka's argument of not extending special rights to the immigrants. Parekh argues that it is wrong to believe that culture and religion won't matter to the non-citizen minorities or immigrants. Culture is part and parcel of a person's identity.

Thus, he advocates for a "variegated" approach that includes affirmative action to ensure equal treatment for ethnic, cultural, and religious minorities compared to the majority community. Parekh also suggests the application of the **Harm Principle** in deciding the rights that can be given to minorities. He also suggests promoting dialogue among civilizations to arrive at some common values.

ASIAN VALUES AND CULTURAL RELATIVISM

The concept of **cultural relativism** is attributed to **Franz Boaz**. According to cultural relativism, culture is an intrinsic part of man's personality, and every culture is rational. We cannot establish hierarchy or primacy of one culture over another.

Cultural relativist perspective opposes the idea of universalism enshrined in **UDHR**. The leaders of Southeast Asia like **Mahathir Mohammed** and **Lee Kuan Yew** oppose the Western notion of human rights. They advocate for an "Asian values" approach which emphasizes social stability, privileging community, and duties over the rights of the individual.

According to **Hoon Chang Yau**, "consensus, harmony, unity, and community" are values commonly proposed as the essence of **Asian culture and identity.**

Criticism of Multiculturalism and Cultural Relativism

Feminists: Susan Moller Okin (Book- *Gender, Justice, and Family*) prefers the universal idea of human rights. Since many cultures are discriminatory toward women, she thinks multiculturalism is bad for women. For her, multiculturalism reinforces gender inequality within these groups.

Liberal Scholars: According to **Amartya Sen,** multiculturalism will end up in ghettoization. It is not good for national unity in the long term. **Brian Barry** also believes that too much cultural consciousness leads to mobilization of people on such issues, which hampers development processes.

Cosmopolitan Scholars: Jeremy Waldron and **Seyla Ben Habib** believe that multiculturalism prevents the intermingling of cultures and thus the emergence of cosmopolitan culture.

41

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Book Review

1. **Rights**

▶ **The Meritocracy Trap:** How America's Foundational Myth Feeds Inequality by Daniel Markovits (2019)

▶ Markovits challenges the idea of meritocracy, showing how it actually increases inequality instead of promoting fairness. He explains that this system helps the elite stay in power, making it harder for others to move up. The book calls for a more fair and equal approach to rights and opportunities.

  ▸ **Key Ideas:**
  - Myth of meritocracy,
  - Elite privilege,
  - Need for equal rights and access

2. **Human Rights**

▶ **Article by Article:** The Universal Declaration of Human Rights for a New Generation by Johannes Morsink

▶ Morsink explains the Universal Declaration of Human Rights (UDHR) one article at a time. He talks about how it was written and why it still matters today. The book shows how the UDHR can help fight injustice and protect rights around the world.

  ▸ **Key Ideas:**
  - UDHR explained,
  - Modern relevance,
  - Global human rights promotion

Introduction for the Answers

▶ In his book *The Grammar of Politics,* **Harold J. Laski** states that "rights are those conditions of life, without which no man in general can seek to be at his best." This highlights the fundamental role of rights in shaping an individual's capacity to lead a meaningful and fulfilling life, making rights central to the concepts of justice, governance, and societal well-being.

▶ **Philosophical Perspective:** Rights, as conceptualized in political philosophy, represent essential entitlements that safeguard individual freedom and dignity. From natural rights to human rights, they form the foundation of justice and equality in society.

▶ In the modern political landscape, rights play a pivotal role in shaping laws and governance, reflecting society's evolving commitment to social justice, personal freedoms, and protection against state overreach.

Interlinkages

▶ **Political Theory:** The concept of rights is closely tied to John Locke's natural rights theory in Social Contract Theory. Locke argues that rights to life, liberty, and property are inalienable and must be protected by the state, which aligns with the modern understanding of political rights in democratic societies.

▶ **Comparative Politics:** The **right to equality** in **India's Constitution** (Article 14-18) is an essential part of the **Indian political system.** It forms the foundation of the **debate on social justice and affirmative action** policies, as seen in the **reservation system,** highlighting how rights are implemented differently across political systems.

▶ **Indian Political Thought: B.R. Ambedkar's vision of equality** and **the rights of Dalits** can be linked to his struggle for social justice. Ambedkar's advocacy for the protection of minority rights is foundational to modern **Indian rights discourse,** which influences debates on social equality and justice today.

▶ **International Relations:** The development of Human Rights after World War II, particularly through the Universal Declaration of Human Rights (UDHR), connects the concept of rights to international governance. This shift from state sovereignty to global responsibility reflects how rights are increasingly seen as universal and not confined by national borders.

▶ Rawls' **Theory of Justice** aligns with the moral theory of rights by framing them within the Difference Principle, which allows inequalities only if they benefit the least advantaged, ensuring fairness in the distribution of rights and resources.

42

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Human Rights in Global Governance:** The Universal Declaration of Human Rights (UDHR) remains central to international relations, guiding policies on refugee protection, climate change, and gender equality, shaping global norms and responsibilities.

▷ **Right to Privacy:** With technological advancements, the right to privacy has gained significance. In India, the Supreme Court's ruling in 2017 reaffirmed privacy as a fundamental right, impacting data protection policies and surveillance.

▷ **Affirmative Action Policies:** The debate on affirmative action, especially in education and employment, remains highly relevant globally. In the U.S. and India, policies like quotas continue to address historical inequalities and promote social justice.

▷ **Environmental Rights:** The growing recognition of environmental rights reflects the intersection of human rights with sustainability. International frameworks like the Paris Agreement emphasize the right to a healthy environment for future generations.

▷ **Value Pluralism:** In multicultural and diverse societies, value pluralism could be a practical approach to reduce confrontations between different values and protect the human rights of individuals.

   ▸ The West shouldn't impose its value system on others. The best way to resolve conflicts is through dialogue among civilizations. Imposing democracy and human rights on all societies cannot be a universal solution to every problem.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Rights, once viewed as static, are now seen as dynamic, adapting to societal progress. As global challenges evolve, so too must our understanding and protection of human rights.

▷ Rights, when understood as a core component of justice, empower individuals and societies. Balancing individual freedoms with collective well-being remains essential in shaping fair governance.

▷ While rights provide a framework for global justice, their implementation faces challenges. The contestation between cultural relativism and universalism continues to shape human rights discourse across nations.

43

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Unit 6: DEMOCRACY

CLASSICAL AND CONTEMPORARY THEORIES; DIFFERENT MODELS OF DEMOCRACY-REPRESENTATIVE, PARTICIPATORY AND DELIBERATIVE

"Government is a trust, and the officers of the government are trustees, and both the trust and trustees are created for the benefit of the people".

- Harold Laski

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

- ⊕ **Success of contemporary democracies lies in the State limiting its own power. Explain. (2023)**
- ⊕ **Elitist theory of democracy denies the possibility of democracy as 'rule of the people'. Elucidate. (2022)**
- ⊕ **Free and fair deliberation is key to the foundation of democracy." Explain. (2021)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: Deliberative democracy. (2019)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: M. K. Gandhi's concept of Swaraj. (2019)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: Substantive Democracy. (2018)**
- ⊕ **Critically examine Macpherson's views on Democracy. (2018)**
- ⊕ **Deliberative democracy does not have its salience without participation and participatory democracy does not have its credence without deliberations. Comment. (2017)**
- ⊕ **Political democracy could not last unless social democracy lay at its base - B.R. Ambedkar. Comment. (2017)**
- ⊕ **Explicate the features of Representative Democracy. (2016)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: Difference between Participatory and Deliberative Democracy. (2015)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: "India has thrown up a form of judicial democracy that has no parallel anywhere else and has nurtured a kind of civil society that is uniquely its own." (Bhikhu Parekh) (2014)**
- ⊕ **Issues of debate in contemporary democratic theory. (2012)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions reflect the ongoing debate in democratic theory, particularly the relationship between state power and democracy, as seen in discussions about representative versus participatory democracy. Key themes like deliberative democracy, substantive democracy, and elitist theory explore the complexities of democratic participation and decision-making. The influence of social democracy and figures like Ambedkar and Gandhi is highlighted in understanding the broader foundations of democracy. The critical role of free and fair deliberation in fostering democratic values is also a recurring theme.

Introduction

In a narrow **sense**, democracy is defined as a form of government and in a **broader sense,** it is defined as a way of life. The roots of democracy can be traced to **Ancient Greece.**

In **Ancient Greece,** direct democracy was practiced in **Athens**. Though **Aristotle** favoured democracy, he considered **Polity** as the best practicable form of government. For him, democracy is a perverted form of polity.

Winston Churchill says that "Many forms of Government have been tried and will be tried in this world of sin and woe. No one pretends that democracy is perfect or all wise. Indeed, it has been said that democracy is the worst form of Government except all those other forms that have been tried from time to time."

44

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Over the suitability of the form of government in the independent countries (post-colonial societies), scholars of comparative politics gave two approaches:

1. **Political Development Approach: Lucian Pie** argued that former colonies must go for an ideal form of government i.e., democracy However, **Farid Zakaria** suggests for constitutionalism should precede democracy. **JS Mill** also believed that democracy is not suitable for barbarians and there is a need of democratic culture.

2. **Political Modernization Approach:** Scholars like **Edward Shils** argued that for developing countries, development is important irrespective of the form of government.

Dimension	Lee Kuan Yew's Perspective	Amartya Sen's Perspective
Focus	Economic growth, political stability and Asian Values.	Intrinsic and instrumental value of democracy. Makes distinction between economic growth and development (as freedom).
Argument	Advocated for "authoritarian capitalism" with strong leadership and limited political freedoms. Views Democracy as a Western value, not suitable for Asian societies.	Believed democracy is essential for protecting individual freedoms (freedom as empowerment) and ensuring sustainable development. India has a rich tradition of deliberative democracy (**Book-** *Argumentative Indian*).
Example	Singapore's transformation into a prosperous nation.	Role of democratic institutions in addressing social issues and **preventing famines.**
Core Debate	**Economic Growth vs. Individual Freedoms:** Appreciated Chinese model of development and justified authoritarianism for economic progress.	Democracy fosters true, long-term development. Appreciated Kerala Model for improvement in human development indicators.

Theories of Democracy

CB Macpherson represents Liberal Egalitarian or Social Liberal School. He has given the most comprehensive theory of democracy. He studied various models of democracy and gave the future roadmap for the ideal democracy.(**Works: The Real World of Democracy** (1965) and **Democratic Theory: Essays in Retrieval** (1975).)

Being a liberal egalitarian, he shows concern for the poor. He argued that the West cannot claim monopoly over democracy. The West does not consider alternative models as democracies. For instance, they call **Iran** and **Russia** as **totalitarian regimes.**

On the other hand, **Karl Marx** calls democracy in Western societies as an **instrument of the Bourgeoisie class** and **dictatorship** of minority over majority or working class. According to Marx, Socialism is more democratic in nature because power is in the hands of the majority. And Communism is a perfect democracy.

Thus, Macpherson rejects following claims of western scholars:

1. **Liberalism has a monopoly over democracy.**

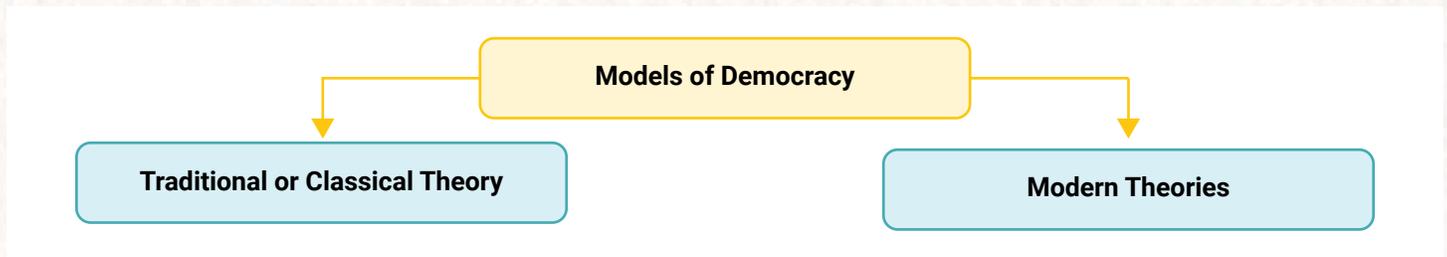2. **Liberal democracy is a perfect model of democracy.**

Macpherson argues that liberalism has always been **undemocratic**. In Western countries, only the property-owning class could vote from the 17th to 19th centuries. **The right to vote** for workers and **the welfare state model** emerged only after the socialist revolution.

Thus, Macpherson suggests that other models can be considered as democracy-

▷ **Communist model:** If there is intra-party democracy in the political party.

▷ **Models of Third World Countries:** If One Party Dominant System exists and enjoys mass support.

45

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Classification of Democratic Models

Macpherson classifies them into two categories:

```
                          Models of Democracy
                                   |
            +----------------------+----------------------+
            |                                             |
  Traditional or Classical Theory                 Modern Theories
```

Traditional or Classical Theories

They are also called normative or philosophical theories, as they emphasize on democratic values such as liberty, equality, dignity, fraternity, etc.

Since they focus on democratic values, they can also be called substantive models of democracy.

Classical Theories can be further categorised into:

▷ **Protective Model (Locke and Bentham):** The role of the government is to protect the rights of man from arbitrary action of the state.

▷ **Developmental Model:** The government maximises the opportunities for development of man and realise true freedom.

CRITICISM: The Classical Model has been criticised for overlooking the real world of democracy and ignoring empirical dimensions. They focus on what ought to be rather than what it is.

Modern or Empirical Theories of Democracy

These theories deal with the real world of democracy. These can be categorised into:

1. **Elitist Theory of Democracy**
2. **Pluralist Theory of Democracy**

ELITIST THEORY OF DEMOCRACY

This theory is based on the Elitist Theory of Power. According to it, power always lies with a small section (elites) irrespective of the form of government.

Robert Michels: Michels' **"Iron Law of Oligarchy"** posits that all organizations, including nations, tend toward oligarchy. His study of the German Social Democratic Party, considered highly democratic, concluded that even radical parties develop bureaucracies that cling to power, turning into oligarchies. The masses, often unwilling or unable to challenge this, withdraw or follow leaders passively.

Vilfredo Pareto: Pareto's quote "History is a graveyard of aristocracies," reflects his view that political power is always in the hands of a few.

Mosca: "In all societies... two classes of people appear - a class that rules and a class that is ruled." He argued that elite dominance is an inevitable feature of all societies due to the organizational and managerial skills required to maintain social order.

C. Wright Mills: He introduced the concept of the **"power elite"**, a small group of influential individuals who hold the majority of power in the United States. According to him, true democratic processes are undermined by the concentration of power in the hands of the elite.

Jospeh Schumpeter (**Book**- *Capitalism, Socialism and Democracy, 1942*): He argues that if elites of leaders are chosen through fair and transparent procedure.

Raymond Aron: Elitism in Auhtoritarian and Westen Liberal Societies

Aron rejects elitism in authoritarian regimes as there is circulation of elites in such societies. Such societies are characterised by **monolithic elite.** Therefore, people do not have any choice to decide who will govern them.

Aron argues that elite structure in western liberal democracies is **fractured** (competitive party system and circulation of

elites). Further, Elitist scholars believe that elitism is not incompatible with democracy.

Elitist Scholars (unlike classical scholars) do not view democracy as a source of empowerment. Rather, they view democracy as a **procedure of elections.** Hence, elitist theory of democracy is called as **procedural model of democracy**.

Economic Theory of Democracy

It is closely associated with Elitist Theory of Democracy. According to **Anthony Downs,** democracy is like a market where politicians are entrepreneurs and voters are consumers. Consumers vote for that party which provides them maximum utility.

For instance, the freebies announced in the party manifesto during the elections.

Pluralist Theory of Democracy

The basis of Pluralist Theory lies in the pluralist theory of power. It is mainly found in the works of **Robert Dahl** (critic of C. Wright Mills- concept of Power Elite and USA as oligarchy). **Dahl** challenges the position of Mills and argues that USA is polyarchy, not oligarchy.

Democracy	Oligarchy	Polyarchy
Rule of all or masses	Rule of few or Elite	Rule of many

According to Dahl, all western societies are polyarchies. Democracies cannot exist in its ideal form, and polyarchy is the practical form of democracy.

Pluralists argue that power in democracy is not concentrated in small section of elites, rather it is distributed among various interest groups.

Features of polyarchy/ Pluralist Democracy:
▷ Right to form associations
▷ Freedom of speech and expression
▷ Toleration for dissent
▷ Multi-party system
▷ Free press
▷ Judicial independence

Thus, according to **Macpherson**, both elitist and pluralist models are empirical and procedural models as they emphasise on the real world of democracy and overlook substantive aspects of democracy.

Pluralist Theory of Democracy

Macpherson appreciates the efforts of these scholars for giving real worldview of democracies. However, he criticises them for ignoring substantive aspects of democracy.

SCHUMPETER (Elitist) Power is concentrated in the hands of few (elites)

DAHL (Pluralist) Power is vested in multiple sources or pressure groups

Meeting Point Both agree that democracy is a procedure

Macpherson's Theory of Democracy

Combination of Empirical and Normative aspects: While going for an empirical view of democracy, he also emphasises on normative aspects of democracy. He believes that the objective of democracy should be empowerment of people and provide creative freedom to the people.

According to him, Ideal Society is the one in which everyone has maximum developmental power, and no one has extractive power.

Macpherson's View of Liberal Capitalist Societies: These societies are far from being egalitarian. The capitalist class has maximum developmental power as well as extractive power. On the other hand, working class has minimal or no developmental and extractive power.
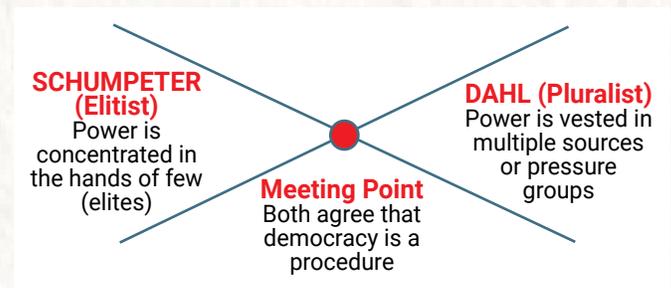
According to Macpherson, power is of two types:
▷ Extractive Power i.e., power of coercion
▷ Developmental Power i.e., power to enhance one's capabilities.

For instance, Macpherson argues that when an independent repairman is paid for his service, it is a fair exchange of labour for payment. However, if the repairman is an employee, his employer exercises extractive power over him. This power dynamic, where few hold extractive power, reduces others' developmental power. **Conversely, increasing an individual's capacity for development doesn't diminish others' capacities.**

C.B. Macpherson distinguishes between **productive power,** the ability to produce material goods, and **extra-productive power,** the ability to engage in activities for enjoyment. Capitalism diminishes both, as labourers transfer productive capacities to capitalists, losing satisfaction value.

Developmental power is exercised when individuals work under their control, free from compulsion. In a capitalist system, labourers engage in compelled labour, limiting their developmental power.

Arguments of Macpherson:
▷ Western liberal democracies are not ideal societies and perfect models of democracy.
▷ They cannot claim monopoly over democracy.
▷ They need to correct themselves and move from an inegalitarian to more egalitarian model.

Representative Democracy

Representative democracy involves citizens electing representatives to make decisions and enact policies on their behalf. **John Locke's** social contract theory, which emphasizes the consent of the governed, has significantly shaped this concept.

FEATURES OF REPRESENTATIVE DEMOCRACY
▷ **Elected Representatives:** Citizens elect individuals or political parties to represent them in legislative bodies or government institutions.
▷ **Delegated Decision-Making:** Elected representatives draft and pass laws, make policy decisions, and represent their constituents' interests.
▷ **Regular Elections:** Periodic elections ensure accountability and allow for potential changes in leadership.
▷ **Rule of Law:** Decisions are made according to established legal principles, protecting individual rights and liberties.

MERITS OF REPRESENTATIVE DEMOCRACY
▷ **Practicality in Large Societies:** Suitable for managing the complexities of large, diverse societies.
▷ **Efficiency in Decision-Making:** Representatives specialize in policymaking, leading to more informed decisions.

"The heart of the democratic process is majority decision-making, and if that is not preserved, democracy is seriously jeopardized." - **James Buchanan**

▷ **Accountability through Elections:** Provides mechanisms to hold representatives accountable.

"Democracy means that institutional arrangements for arriving at political decisions in which individuals acquire the power to decide by means of a competitive struggle for the people's vote." - Joseph Schumpeter

▷ **Stability and Predictability:** Includes fixed terms for officials and established procedures for decision-making.
▷ **Protection of Minority Rights:** Safeguards to prevent the tyranny of the majority.

"The health of a democratic society may be measured by the quality of functions performed by private citizens." - **Alexis de Tocqueville**

▷ **Legal Framework:** Ensures government actions are subject to legal scrutiny.

"Wherever law ends, tyranny begins." - **John Locke**

CRITICISM OF REPRESENTATIVE DEMOCRACY
▷ **Limited Direct Participation:** Reduces citizens' direct involvement, leading to disconnection. Example: Low voter turnout.

"The absence of participation in power by citizens is the first symptom of what is generally called 'the crisis of democracy.'" - **Hannah Arendt**

▷ **Risk of Elite Capture:** Representatives may serve elites or special interest groups. Example: Prioritizing interests of wealthy elites over the general populace.
▷ **Accountability Issues:** Difficulty holding representatives accountable between elections. Example: Unfulfilled campaign promises.

"When the ordinary citizen is virtually powerless in shaping or participating in government decisions, government policy tends to be... responsive to the privileged." - **Robert Dahl**

▷ **Underrepresentation:** Certain groups may be underrepresented, leading to disparities. Example: Marginalized groups having limited representation.

"Inequalities in the actual modes of public voice, access to public office, and influence on state actions undercut democratic participation and equality." **- Iris Marion Young**

▷ **Party Politics:** Partisan interests can overshadow the public interest.

"The party in a democracy is the instrument of democracy." **- Maurice Duverger**

▷ **Complex Campaign Financing:** Raises concerns about election fairness and transparency.

"Our democracy has sold out to the highest bidder." **- Lawrence Lessig**

▷ **Lack of Inclusivity:** May not provide mechanisms for direct citizen participation on important issues. Example: Exclusion of some voices in decision-making.

"Strong democracy emphasizes debate and active participation by citizens in the public realm." **- Benjamin Barber**

In order to overcome the challenges of representative democracy, there is a need integrate digital platforms for direct feedback, enhance transparency, foster community engagement, and ensure mechanisms for accountability and inclusivity.

Participatory Democracy

The classical theory of participatory democracy, advanced by influential political thinkers such as Jean-Jacques Rousseau and John Stuart Mill, lays the foundational framework for understanding this form of governance.

The supporters of participatory democracy are Aristotle, Gandhi, Hannah Arendt, Habermas, etc. They also support civic republicanism (direct participation of people in governance).

JEAN-JACQUES ROUSSEAU'S CONTRIBUTION

▷ Rousseau articulated the concept of popular sovereignty, positing that sovereignty originates in and is perpetually retained by the people.

▷ For Rousseau, sovereignty is inalienable and cannot be represented. The government serves merely as an instrument to execute the general will.

▷ The people must engage in continuous deliberation on public policy. Non-adherence to the people's instructions by the government necessitates its replacement.

JOHN STUART MILL'S PERSPECTIVE

"The worth of a state, in the long run, is the worth of the individuals composing it." **- John Stuart Mill**

▷ Mill argued that participation shields ordinary citizens from autocracy and advances humanity's development.

▷ His ideal political system involves participatory institutions fostering active citizenship.

▷ These institutions encourage individuals to prioritize the common good over self-interests.

▷ Mill viewed democratic institutions as "schools of political capacity."

Scholars like Carole Pateman and Benjamin Barber advocate for "strong" democracy, emphasizing greater citizen involvement. Pateman mentions that "Participatory democracy is a way of life."

Example: Porto Alegre's Participatory Budgeting, where citizens allocate part of the municipal budget through public meetings.

JUSTIFICATIONS FOR CITIZEN PARTICIPATION

▷ **Instrumental View:** Participation driven by personal interests. Voting is based on a rational cost-benefit analysis.

  ▶ **Example:** Supporting a candidate whose policies align with personal economic interests.

▷ **Developmental or Educational View:** Enhances moral, social, and political awareness. According to John Dewey "Democracy needs to be born anew every generation, and education is its midwife."

  ▶ **Example:** Mock election simulations in schools foster civic responsibility.

▷ **Communitarian View:** Contributes to the common good and community well-being.

  ▶ **Example:** Community clean-up days foster solidarity and shared responsibility.

CHARACTERISTICS OF PARTICIPATORY DEMOCRACY

▷ Direct Citizen Involvement: Citizens engage directly in political decision-making (Rousseau's "general will").

▷ Decentralization: Decision-making at local levels.

49

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

▷ **Open and Inclusive:** Ensures equal participation for all citizens.

▷ **Transparency and Accountability:** Government actions are accessible to the public (Robert Dahl).

▷ **Active Civic Education:** Prioritizes informed participation.

▷ **Theory of Communicative Action:** Public forums and debates for policy discussion (Jurgen Habermas).

▷ **Referendums and Initiatives:** Citizens propose and vote on policy decisions (JS Mill supported direct democracy practices).

▷ **Diverse Forms of Participation:** Includes voting, public hearings, and online activism.

▷ **Continuous Engagement:** Encourages political activity beyond elections (Robert D. Putnam).

▷ **Citizen Oversight:** Mechanisms for citizen oversight of government actions.

CONTEMPORARY RELEVANCE

▷ **Institutional mechanisms** (supported by **Liberal** School): Gram Sabhas, Social Audit, etc.

▷ **Grassroot Democracy** (Supported by **Marxist** School): Empowerment of SCs, STs, women, etc.

CRITICISM OF PARTICIPATORY DEMOCRACY

▷ **Feasibility in Large Populations:** Difficult to ensure meaningful participation (Robert Dahl).

▷ **Limited Expertise:** Citizens may lack specialized knowledge (Joseph Schumpeter).

▷ **Potential for Populism:** Risk of decisions influenced by emotions (Hannah Arendt).

▷ **Low Turnout:** Decisions may not represent the broader population. (Carole Pateman)

▷ **Resource Intensity:** Referendums and initiatives can divert resources from other governance tasks. (Benjamin Barber)

▷ **Manipulation and Coercion:** Risk of manipulation or coercion by interest groups. (Jürgen Habermas):

Therefore, participatory democracy strives for increased citizen involvement in decision-making but faces challenges in implementation and effectiveness.

Deliberative Democracy

Deliberative democracy critiques the limitations of voting-centric models. It emphasizes the importance of reasoned discourse and inclusive dialogue in shaping public policy. This theory prioritizes the quality of deliberation and exchange of ideas among citizens, aiming to achieve well-informed and legitimate collective decisions.

The essence of deliberative democracy lies in rational **debate**. Most important component of rational debate is the right to freedom of speech and expression (which includes freedom to form association and the right to dissent).

In this model, there is no need for hyphenation (no need of mentioning deliberation) as idea of deliberation is inherent in the idea of democracy.

Important Proponents

Jurgen Habermas: He views public deliberation as a way for citizens to achieve consensus and make decisions based on rational discourse. According to him, "Deliberation takes place when the participants in the discourse argue and weigh the validity claims with the intention of reaching a rationally motivated agreement."

John Rawls: He argued that the principles of justice should be determined through a fair process of deliberation among citizens who are behind a "veil of ignorance" regarding their own circumstances

Joshua Cohen: He emphasizes the need for fairness in deliberative processes and the importance of achieving mutual respect among participants.

Pericles (Athenian Statesman): Debate and discussion are preconditions for sound policy, rather than obstacle.

Habermas: He talks about the importance of the public sphere and emphasises on deliberative democracy because he talks about the importance of communicative action in ideal speech situations (open discussion without fear of coercion).

50

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Features of Deliberative Democracy

▷ **Reasoned Discourse:** It advocates for rational, informed discussions, fostering democratic legitimacy through "communicative rationality."

▸ **Jurgen Habermas:** "The only force that can overcome the fragmented modernity of our age and permit the emergence of a democratic public sphere is the force of what I have called **communicative rationality."**

▷ **Inclusivity:** It emphasizes the inclusion of diverse voices and perspectives in decision-making.

▷ **Public Reason:** Policies and decisions should be justified through reasons accessible to all citizens.

▸ **John Rawls:** "The principles of justice are the result of public reason, now fully developed, and the result of free and reasoned agreement among equals."

▷ **Active Citizenship:** Encourages participation beyond voting, involving citizens in discussions and policymaking. Example: Ireland's citizens' assembly on abortion influenced legislative changes.

▷ **Common Ground:** Aims to find consensus through reasoned discourse.

▸ **James S. Fishkin:** "Deliberative democracy...offers a way to counter the polarization and paralysis that have come to characterize contemporary politics."

▷ **Impact on Policy:** Outcomes from public deliberation meaningfully influence public policy.

▷ **Democratic Legitimacy:** Decisions made through inclusive and informed deliberation are seen as more legitimate.

▷ **Citizen Education:** Participation in deliberation educates citizens about political issues, enhancing reasoning and empathy.

SIGNIFICANCE OF DELIBERATIVE DEMOCRACY

▷ It makes democracy consociational (a stable democratic system in deeply divided societies that is based on power sharing), which is superior to the majoritarian model.

▷ It provides legitimacy to the laws.

CRITICISM OF DELIBERATIVE DEMOCRACY

▷ **Inclusivity and Participation:** Risk of amplifying dominant group voices, sidelining marginalized groups.

▷ **Elitism and Expertise:** Preference for skilled communicators or experts can create an epistemic elite.

▷ **Implementation Challenges:** Logistical difficulties and resource demands on a large scale.

▷ **Manipulation and Coercion:** Potential for powerful actors to control deliberative processes.

▷ **Slow Decision-Making:** Time-consuming nature may impede timely responses to emergencies.

▷ **Limited Enforcement:** Concerns about the lack of enforcement mechanisms.

DIFFERENCE BETWEEN PARTICIPATORY AND DELIBERATIVE DEMOCRACY

Participatory Democracy	Deliberative Democracy
Direct citizen involvement in decision-making, focusing on the number of participants.	Emphasizes quality of participation through rational deliberation.
Direct democracy, citizens make decisions themselves.	Exists in both representative and participatory models, focusing on meaningful debate.
Involves direct, broad citizen engagement in local decision-making.	Relies on informed, reasoned discourse and consensus-building.
Emphasizes broad inclusion and transparency in processes.	Ensures diverse voices and public insight into deliberative processes.
Focuses on civic education and legitimacy through direct involvement.	Educates citizens and derives legitimacy from informed, inclusive deliberation.

51

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Book Review

1. **Twilight of Democracy by Anne Applebaum**

   Anne Applebaum highlights how authoritarianism appeals to individuals disillusioned with liberal democracy by offering simplified narratives, loyalty-based systems, and exclusionary politics. She warns that authoritarian movements gradually erode democratic norms through the use of propaganda and the strategic manipulation of elites.

2. **Democracy Erodes from the Top by Larry Bartels**

   Larry Bartels argues that democratic backsliding in Europe is primarily driven by political leaders who exploit systemic vulnerabilities, rather than by popular demand for populism. He challenges the myth of a populist wave and emphasizes that democratic erosion is largely an elite-driven process aimed at entrenching power.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ According to **John Stuart Mill,** democracy is a system that fosters individual liberty and autonomy while balancing social stability. His theory champions the importance of participation and safeguards against the "tyranny of the majority."

▷ **Winston Churchill** famously described democracy as the "worst form of government, except for all those others that have been tried." This captures the inherent flaws yet enduring value of democratic systems.

▷ Democracy is the system where citizens hold the power to elect representatives, engage in decision-making, and ensure accountability. It encompasses different models, including representative, participatory, and deliberative forms.

Interlinkages

▷ **Political Theory and Thought:** The concept of democracy directly ties with political philosophers like John Stuart Mill, who advocated for the expansion of individual liberty within a democratic framework, emphasizing representative democracy's importance. Comparative studies of democracy also link classical theories with contemporary critiques like deliberative democracy.

▷ **Indian Political Thought:** In analyzing the evolution of Indian democracy, theories of democracy by Mill and others can be juxtaposed with India's democratic experience, highlighting how India's representation-based system has been shaped by both classical and modern democratic theories. The democratic aspirations in the Constitution mirror these theoretical ideas.

▷ **Constitutional Framework:** Understanding representative democracy in the context of the Indian Constitution helps link the foundational democratic ideals in governance. It highlights the balance between democracy and the rule of law, showing how representative democracy is institutionalized within India's political framework, ensuring citizen participation.

▷ **International Relations:** Contemporary models of democracy, particularly **deliberative democracy,** offer a framework to examine **global governance** and the spread of **democratic ideals.** The theory helps understand international norms such as **human rights, democracy promotion,** and the challenges posed by **authoritarian regimes** in world politics.

▷ **Comparative Politics:** Comparing **democratic systems** globally can be enhanced by analyzing how different countries implement **representative, participatory,** or **deliberative democracy.** Studying real-world examples, such as the evolution of **participatory democracy** in **Latin American countries,** enriches understanding of classical and contemporary democratic theories in practice.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Contemporary Global Democracy and the Crisis of Representation:** The classical theories of **representative democracy** by thinkers like **John Stuart Mill** provide a foundation for examining modern **democratic crises.** In contemporary times, **voter apathy,** the **rise of populism,** and questions about **political accountability** reflect the challenges faced by representative democracy, especially when electoral systems appear disconnected from citizens' real needs.

▷ **Rise of Participatory and Deliberative Democracy:** As the global democratic landscape shifts, especially in response

to globalization and rising inequality, participatory democracy has gained traction. Movements like Occupy Wall Street and Arab Spring showcase how modern citizens demand more active participation in political decision-making. This mirrors the theories of democracy that prioritize engagement and deliberation over traditional representative models.

▷ **Technology and Democracy:** The deliberative model of democracy becomes particularly relevant in the digital age, where online platforms enable more open discussions. The rise of digital democracy, social media activism, and e-democracy aligns with contemporary concepts of deliberation, allowing citizens to engage in political discourse outside traditional frameworks, facilitating direct and inclusive democratic participation.

▷ **Democracy Promotion and Authoritarianism:** Democracy promotion is a key focus in contemporary international relations, where nations like the US, EU, and NGOs advocate for the spread of democratic values globally. The global debate between representative democracy and authoritarian regimes influences international policies and global politics. The tension between democratic ideals and rising authoritarian tendencies can be better understood through classical and contemporary models of democracy.

▷ **Democracy in Post-Colonial Contexts:** In former colonies, democratic theory interacts with issues such as ethnic identity, post-colonial governance, and state legitimacy. The transition to democratic governance in countries like India and Africa often challenges classical democratic models. Contemporary theories of deliberative democracy are particularly applicable in understanding how diverse societies can engage in inclusive political dialogues to overcome historical injustices and promote political reconciliation.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Democracy remains a dynamic and evolving concept, where classical and **contemporary models** continue to shape political systems. Despite challenges, it is crucial to **adapt democratic practices** to modern realities like globalization and **technological advancements.**

▷ The theory of **democracy** emphasizes the importance of **representation, participation,** and **deliberation**. By integrating **contemporary models,** we can strengthen democratic institutions to ensure **citizen engagement** and address the modern-day **political crisis.**

▷ Classical theories laid the foundation for **modern democracy,** but current **global challenges** highlight the need for **inclusive participation. Deliberative democracy** and **participatory models** offer effective solutions to modern governance issues, ensuring **inclusive political processes.**

▷ **Deliberative democracy** does not have its salience without **participation**, and **participatory democracy** does not have its credence without **deliberations**. Both provide normative value to democracy. Without them, democracy would just remain topsoil.

53

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Unit 7: CONCEPT OF POWER: HEGEMONY, IDEOLOGY AND LEGITIMACY

"Political Science is 'the study of the shaping and sharing of power".

- H. Lasswell and A. Kaplan (Power and Society; 1950)

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

- ⊕ **Linkage between Power and Hegemony.(2024)**
- ⊕ **Comment on Foucault's concept of power. (2023)**
- ⊕ **Comment on Bases of Power. (2022)**
- ⊕ **Comment on Tools for the legitimation of state. (2021)**
- ⊕ **Examine the nature and meaning of power. (2020)**
- ⊕ **According to Gramsci, "Hegemony is primarily based on organization of consent". Comment (2019)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: End of ideology debate (2019)**
- ⊕ **Explain the relationship between power, authority and legitimacy. (2018)**
- ⊕ **Write a brief note on The End of History debate. (2017)**
- ⊕ **Distinguish between Power and Authority. (2015)**
- ⊕ **Discuss the "Crisis of Legitimacy" in capitalist societies. (2015)**
- ⊕ **"Power is never a property of an individual; it belongs to a group and remains in existence only so long as the groups keep together". (Hannah Arendt) Comment (2014)**
- ⊕ **Examine the conditions that are required for the maintenance of legitimacy in modern societies. (2014)**
- ⊕ **Comment on Hannah Arendt's conception of the 'political'. (2012)**
- ⊕ **Distinguish between the concepts of legitimacy and hegemony. (2012)**
- ⊕ **Attempt a comparative examination of the views of Marx and Weber on 'Power'. (2011)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions highlight the intricate relationship between **power** and **hegemony**, focusing on thinkers like **Foucault** and **Gramsci**, with an emphasis on **consent-based** hegemony. Key themes include the **bases of power, legitimation of the state,** and the **nature of power** itself. The concept of **authority** versus **power, legitimacy** in modern societies, and the **Crisis of Legitimacy** in capitalist systems are central to understanding political structures. Comparisons between **Marx** and **Weber** on **power**, along with **Hannah Arendt's** views on **political life**, provide foundational insights into the dynamics of political authority and control.

Introduction

'Power' may be regarded as one of the central concepts of political science. It is said that the concept of power holds the same status in the realm of political science as held by the concept of money in the realm of economics.

This view was confirmed by William A. Robson who suggested: "It is with power in society that political science is primarily concerned—its nature, basis, processes, scope and results ... The 'focus of interest' centres on the struggle to gain or retain power, to exercise power or influence over others, or to resist that exercise".

Michel Foucault's view on power is multifaceted and complex. He rejected the traditional notion of power as something that is only held by a few individuals or institutions and instead argued that power is omnipresent and diffused throughout society. According to Foucault, power is not just repressive but also productive; it shapes knowledge, discourse, and social practices.

54

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

According to Robert Dahl, power is a relational concept. He describes power as a capacity to get things done by the other either willingly (soft power) or unwillingly (hard power).

Conceptualization of Power: By Coser (1982)

Coser delineated two major traditions in the conceptualisation of power that can be distinguished in sociological writings. These are as follows:

Scholar	Tradition	Key Arguments
Max Weber	Power as Domination	Power is seen as a relationship where one actor (A) can impose their will on another actor (B), even against B's resistance. Power is inherently tied to the ability to dominate others.
Talcott Parsons	Power as a Collective Facility	Power is viewed as a positive social resource that collectives can utilize to achieve their goals. It is a means to facilitate collective action and is essential for the functioning of social systems.

Theories of Power

According to **Steven Lukes** (**Power: A Radical View**, 1975), power has three faces:

1. **Ability to influence the decision making** (Ex- **Hobbes's notion of power** i.e., ability of an 'agent' to affect the behaviour of a 'patient').
2. **Capacity to shape the political agenda and thus prevent decisions being made** (Ex- Interest Groups shaping the political agenda and Marx's ideas).
3. **The form of controlling people's thoughts by the manipulation of their perceptions and preferences** (Ex- Gramsci's concept of hegemony and Marcuse's one-dimensional man).

Liberal Perspective of Power

According to liberals, the state holds a monopoly on power and acts as a symbol of the people, reflecting **popular sovereignty.** In liberal democracies, ultimate power lies with the people, and the government exercises power delegated by them.

Marxist Theory of Power

Marx viewed political power as being possessed by those who control the means of production, while the labour force has little or no control over these means. This **"relation of production"** thus determines the distribution of political power.

State as Instrument: Marx sees a **close integration between political power and the prevailing socio-economic system.** According to Marxist theory, **the state is part of the superstructure** and is not autonomous. In practice, the state functions as the executive committee of the bourgeoisie, exercising power on behalf of the economically dominant class.
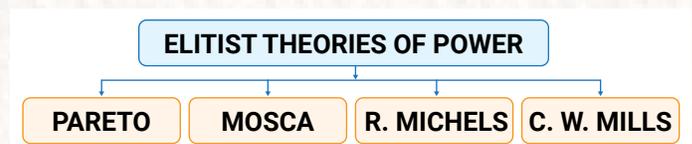
Transitional State: Marxists believe that in a **socialist society** characterized by **the dictatorship of the proletariat,** the majority exercises power. In a **communist society,** they envision **a stateless and classless system** where no one exercises power over others, and everyone is free.

Elitist Theory of Power

Elitist Theory of Power is seen as an improvement over the Liberal and Marxist theory of power. It is also called as Empirical Theory (observation based).

VILFREDO PARETO'S ELITIST THEORY OF POWER

Elitist Theory of Pareto (**Book**- *Mind and Society*) divides society into the **elite and the non-elite.** The elite are those considered the best by peers and the public, with **two subcategories:** the

ELITIST THEORIES OF POWER

PARETO   MOSCA   R. MICHELS   C. W. MILLS

55

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

governing elite (ruling minority), who influence or participate in government, and the non-governing elite.

Apart from elites, he categories the "others" as masses or the ruled majority. He argues that power always lies with the elite.

Pareto- *"History of mankind has been the graveyard of aristocracy."*

Pareto asserted that those at the top in wealth and other attributes also hold significant political and social influence.

Roots of Elitist Theory

The roots of the theory can be traced to the thoughts of-

▷ **Plato:** Classified people into 3 categories i.e., men of reason, courage and appetite.

▷ **Aristotle:** Master-Slave Relationship.

▷ **Machiavelli:** Everyone can't be a Prince.

THEORY OF CIRCULATION OF ELITES

He introduced the "circulation of elites," where individuals move between elite and non-elite groups (ruling minority), or one elite replaces another. And the power circulates in the closed loop between them. This power never percolates down to the masses

Pareto believes that there are two types of elites: Foxes (mentally strong), and Lions, (physically strong). These groups are interdependent.
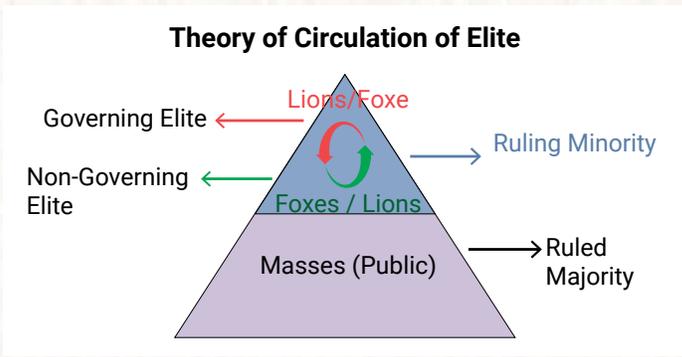
Renewal of Elite Class: Pareto observed that the elite continually renews itself by incorporating individuals from lower classes. This process sustains both quality and stability within the elite. However, if this circulation slows down, the elite can degenerate while the non-elite acquire superior elements, leading to instability and potential revolution. To counter such threats, the governing elite may integrate potential challengers from lower classes, who then adopt the established elite's interests.

Theory of Circulation of Elite

Note: The process of renewal of elite class is similar to **the concept of Sanskritization (MN Srinivas)** whereby people of lower castes collectively try to adopt upper caste practices and beliefs to acquire higher status.

Gaetano Mosca

According to Mosca, in all societies there are two classes of people:

▷ **One that rules:** performs all political functions, monopolizes power and enjoys all the advantages and privileges that accompany power.

▷ **Other that is ruled:** Majority in number, but governed and controlled by ruling class through legal, sometimes arbitrary and violent means.

Like Pareto, Mosca was also concerned with elites as groups of people vested with political power. He argues that power in democracy lies with those who have organisation skills (leadership skills). Members of this ruling minority enjoy **high esteem** in the eyes of ruled majority due to their outstanding qualities.

ROBERT MICHELS (BOOK- POLITICAL PARTIES)

R. Michels has given the concept of Iron Law of Oligarchy (universally proven law). He argues that democracy (power with people) is a myth. Whether it is Western liberal state like USA or communist state like Russia, power always lies with the small section of elite (power concentrated in the hands of few). It is called as the Iron Law of Oligarchy. Thus, Michels argued that all forms of government are destined to be reduced to oligarchy.

View of Raymond Aron: He argues that the situation in Western countries is better because of the **fractured nature** of the elite structure.

Fractured Elite	Monolithic Elite
Liberal States have a competitive party system and people have choices with respect to political elite class.	In Communist states, there exists a single party and people do not have choices.

Thus, people can exercise the franchise (voting rights) and power in the direct democracies and states with multi-party system.

C. WRIGHT MILLS (BOOK- THE POWER ELITE)

▷ **Coalition and Strategic Positions:** The 'power elite' is a coalition of influential groups holding dominant positions in key areas of social life in modern American society, occupying strategic command posts.

▷ **Creation of Social Demands:** These elites create social demands rather than gaining power by fulfilling existing ones, thereby shaping society according to their interests.

Power Elite — Small group of corporate, political, military leaders. They are connected by social networks.

Middle Level — Leaders and other members of government, Opinion Leaders, special interest group leaders. They help to implement the decisions of power elite

The Masses — Majority of the population. They are unorganised and disengaged and exploited by those with more power.

Distribution of Power among major segments in American Society

▷ **Self-Conscious Class and Moral Indifference:** The power elites form a self-conscious class, reinforcing each other's power through cooperation. They project an image of high moral character for societal respect but are often indifferent to their actual moral and social responsibilities.

In USA, power elites are top government executives, military directors and corporation officials.
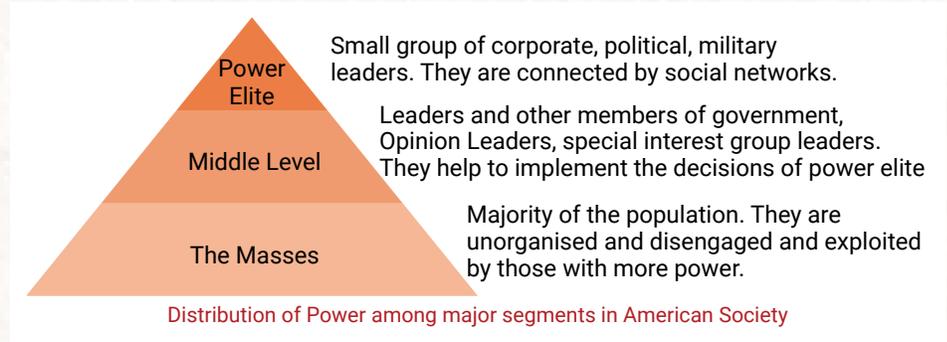
Pluralist Theory of Power

Associated scholars: Robert Dahl and **Charles Lindblom**

Context of Robert Dahl's Work:

In his work **"Who Governs?"**, Dahl studied the observations of **C. Wright Mills** i.e., USA is ruled by few, and USA is actually not a democracy rather an oligarchy.

Dahl conducted study in New Havens (Connecticut State of USA) and **falsified C. Wright Mills' view about democracy in USA.** Dahl argued that ordinary people in USA exercise a considerable amount of power. However, they do not exercise power as individuals, rather they exercise power **as members of interest groups** or pressure groups. And different interest groups enjoy fairly equal amount of power.

Thus, Dahl held that USA is not an oligarchy, rather **USA is a polyarchy.**

Democracy	Oligarchy	Polyarchy
Rule of People (Ideal form)	Rule of Few (Pakistan)	Rule of many (USA)

Democracy is a system where all citizens participate in the governance of the country. But according to the pluralist, this is utopia or an ideal scenario. They believe that we can not have a perfect democracy and what exists in reality is a polyarchy (an approximate democracy). Polyarchy means maximum democracy which is feasible or practically possible.

Who does hold power in Western Liberal Democracy?

Classical Liberals	Everyone holds equal power.
Marxists	Power is held by economically dominant classes.
Elitists	Power elites wield the power or power is held by few.
Pluralists	Power lies with the people in groups (Interest Groups).

NEO-PLURALIST VIEW OF POWER

Robert Dahl revised his earlier opinion. He acknowledged that in USA all groups do not wield and exercise equal amount of power. According to him, the corporate groups wield greater amount of power.

It means that USA is not a polyarchy. Rather USA is a "deformed polyarchy", i.e., power in polyarchy is tilted in favour of corporate groups.

Conclusion: The Neo-pluralist view of power comes near to the position held by Marxist i.e., economically dominant classes exercise greater power.

NEO-NEO PLURALIST VIEW OF POWER

Eric Nordlinger has given neo-neo pluralist view of power. He argues that **the State monopolises all the power.** This analysis is relevant with respect to the third world countries where state is the most prominent actor.

Thus, this view of Nordlinger comes near to the **Structural Marxists** or concept of **Overdeveloped State.**

Various Perspectives on Power

Various other perspectives on power are discussed below:

GRAMSCIAN VIEW OF POWER

Gramsci's view of power focuses on **cultural hegemony,** where dominant groups maintain control by **shaping thoughts through societal norms, values,** and **beliefs**. This subtle, ideological influence ensures **consent** and **stability**, making **power appear natural** and **inevitable r**ather than enforced through coercion.

This invisible power i.e., hegemony allows the bourgeoisie class to rule in the society. Therefore, he suggests fighting **the war of position** first, and then the **war of manoeuvre.**

FEMINIST VIEW OF POWER

Since the nature of society has always been patriarchal, feminists believe that the power always lies with the man.

HANNAH ARENDT'S VIEW OF POWER

She provides an unconventional view of power. She suggests that power lies with the people acting in concert with each other. Power is sui generis in nature, and it should not be equated with force, strength and violence. Thus, she provides a positive view of power.

"Power corresponds to the human ability not just to act but to act in concert. Power is never the property of an individual; it belongs to a group and remains in existence only so long as the group keeps together." **(Hannah Arendt)**

For example: The Civil Rights Movement, led by Martin Luther King Jr., used collective action and peaceful protests to advocate for racial equality.

POST-MODERNIST VIEW OF POWER

The post-modernists refute the monochromatic view and argue that there can be no one narrative to describe society and reality and instead there are multiple narratives.

Jean-François Lyotard (postmodernist), thus, calls postmodernism as **incredulity** (disbelief) **towards metanarratives** (grand theories).

FOUCAULT'S THEORY OF POWER

Foucault is a French philosopher and often categorised as **Postmodernist, Post-structuralist** and **Critical School Theorist** (Critical Theorists aim to understand various forms in which oppression exist).

Michel Foucault's concept of power is a central element of his philosophical and sociological work. Foucault's ideas on power are complex and multifaceted, and they have had a significant influence on various fields, including sociology, political science, and philosophy.

Rejection of Hobbesian Notion: Being a postmodernist, Foucault rejects the metanarrative/ dominant perspective on power. Hobbesian notion of power. It represents a **juridico-legal view of power** i.e. power lies with the sovereign state. Foucault argues that if we limit ourselves with this view, then we fail to understand infinite ways in which power operates in the society.

Rejection of Marxist View: As per the Marxist view, state is an executive committee of bourgeoisie class. However, Foucault believes that Marxian view is just another metanarrative.

Foucault's Prescription: According to Foucault, metanarratives are constructed to hide rather than reveal the reality. Therefore, he emphasises that we should not look at the truth through these narratives. Since power operates throughout the society in infinite ways, like **the blood flows through the network of capillaries.** So, we should look for the truth from multiple perspectives or narratives.

Thus, Foucault shifts his focus of his study of power from state to society and provides a **sociological view** of power. It is known as **micro-view of power.**

58

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

KEY FEATURES OF FOUCAULT'S CONCEPT OF POWER

▷ **Ubiquitous and Productive Nature of Power:** By saying *"Power is everywhere; not because it embraces everything, but because it comes from everywhere"*, he means that power is not confined to specific institutions or individuals but is present everywhere in society. Power is a strategy, and it operates in the form of complex web of social relations.

▷ **Productive Nature of Power:** Power is not necessarily coercive; it can be productive. It provides identity to the agent exercising power. Thus, power is productive, as it shapes knowledge, norms, and social practices.

  ▸ **Example-** Knowledge of Medical Science provides identity and thus power to the Doctor.

▷ **Power/Knowledge Relationship:** Foucault introduced the concept of "power/knowledge" to emphasize the interconnectedness of power and knowledge. Knowledge is phenomenon of power and only that knowledge is treated as knowledge or truth which comes with power. Thus, power structures shape what is considered valid knowledge, and knowledge reinforces existing power structures.

  ▸ **Example-** Homosexuality is considered as wrong and Heterosexuality is considered as natural and right. This knowledge reflects the phenomenon of power (majoritarian view).

Note: Nietzsche's ideas on the relationship between truth, knowledge and power influenced him very much. Nietzsche rejected the notion that history unfolds in a rational way with the gradual development of higher forms of reason. Any form of knowledge or truth that emerges in a culture not because it is valuable or eternal, but it is because one group manages to impose their will on others.

▷ **Panopticism and Surveillance:** Foucault's concept of the Panopticon, borrowed from Jeremy Bentham, illustrates how surveillance and the potential for surveillance can exert control over individuals. The idea is that people modify their behaviour when they believe they are being watched.

"He who is subjected to a field of visibility, and who knows it, assumes responsibility for the constraints of power." **- Foucault**

▷ **Discourse and Power:** Foucault describes discourse as the location where power and knowledge intersect. Discourse generates the subject. Foucault explored how power operates through discourse, which consists of language, practices, and institutions that shape knowledge and social reality. Discourses can marginalize certain groups and reinforce dominant ideologies. For Foucault, power is discourse.

  ▸ **Example:** Identity is a product of discourse.

▷ **Resistance and Subjugation:** Foucault recognized that power is not unidirectional; it operates in a network of resistance and subjugation. Individuals and groups can resist power structures and create counter discourses.

"Where there is power, there is resistance." **(Foucault)**

▷ **Historical Contingency:** Foucault emphasized that power is historically contingent, meaning that it changes over time and in response to social and cultural shifts. There is no ultimate truth, rather there are regimes of truth. Truth belongs to this world, in different phases of history different truths have prevailed. Foucault calls this method studying history as Archaeology.

"Power is not an institution, and not a structure; neither is it a certain strength we are endowed with; it is the name that one attributes to a complex strategical situation in a particular society." **(Foucault)**

▷ **Disciplinary Power:** In his book "Discipline and Punish", Foucault narrates an incident of torturous punishment of a man in public to create fear or terror. However, in modern times, the technique of exercising power has changed. It is called as disciplinary power (it is exercised on mind. It is oppressive, but not realised as it is considered as normal).

  ▸ Example: Earlier, prisons were considered as places of torture. Today they are being seen as places of reform.

Governmentality: It refers to the techniques and strategies used by governments to control and manage populations. It combines governance ("government") with mentalities ("mentalities"), emphasizing how modern states exercise power through an array of **institutions** (prisons, schools, etc.), **practices,** and **knowledge systems to regulate the behaviour and thoughts of individuals.**

It also involves the creation of **policies and practices** that guide and shape the conduct of people, aiming to produce a **compliant and productive citizenry.**

Biopower: Foucault's biopower refers to how modern states regulate populations by managing biological aspects like birth rates, health, and hygiene. It shifts power from sovereign control over life and death to optimizing and regulating life itself. This is how state goes for homogenisation easier control and regulation of populations.

Michel Foucault challenges traditional views of power as solely negative and oppressive. Instead, he sees power as **productive, shaping knowledge, subjects,** and **even reality**. Foucault emphasizes the historical nature of knowledge and power, with strategies like **pastorate** (love-based power) and **panopticism** (surveillance) used to control. However, his later works suggest individuals can resist through self-cultivation and challenge power structures.

59

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Concept of Authority

Authority is based on a perceived **'right to rule'** and brings about **compliance** through a **moral obligation** on the part of the ruled to obey.

It constitutes a socially or institutionally sanctioned form of power, where individuals or entities are endowed with the formal prerogative to make decisions, issue directives, or enforce regulations within a specific domain or context.

Max Weber, a prominent sociologist and critic of Marx, identified three key elements of authority which help to understand the ways in which the authority in the society is established. These are:

▷ **Traditional Authority:** It is based on customs, traditions and hereditary rights. Society tends to accept traditional authority because it is deeply ingrained in cultural norms and history.

  ▸ Example- Leadership passed down through generations within a family or lineage (monarchies, tribal societies, etc.).

▷ **Legal-Rational Authorities:** Legal-rational authority is impersonal and grounded in laws, rules, bureaucratic system and government.

  ▸ Example- Elected officials in democracies, judges in courts, and managers in big corporations, etc.

▷ **Charismatic Authority:** It is derived from charisma and exceptional leadership. Charismatic leaders possess qualities that make them extraordinary and help create a strong followers base. Charismatic authority can be transformative and may challenge existing power structures.

  ▸ Example- Mahatma Gandhi's leadership during Indian freedom struggle.

Dimension	Deliberative Democracy	Authority
Definition	The **ability to influence** or control others	The **legitimate right** to exercise power
Source	Can be derived from various means (coercion, influence, etc.)	Derived from a recognized and accepted position or institution
Legitimacy	Not necessarily legitimate or accepted	Legitimate and socially or institutionally accepted
Nature	Can be personal or informal	Institutionalized and formal
Enforcement	May rely on force, coercion, or persuasion	Relies on established rules and norms
Scholars	**Hobbes** view on power and **Steven Lukes'** three faces of power	**Max Weber's** types of authority, **Robert Michels'** concept of oligarchy

OTHER PERSPECTIVES ON AUTHORITY

Hannah Arendt: Authority is an essential element of social and political stability, derived from the collective consent of the governed.

Steven Lukes: He outlined three dimensions of power: decision-making power, agenda-setting power, and ideological power. These dimensions help explain how power operates within decision-making processes and influences authority.

Robert Dahl: Democratic systems function effectively when authority is pluralistically distributed among various groups and institutions.

Jurgen Habermas: Legitimate authority is achieved through reasoned public dialogue and consensus, underscoring the importance of communicative action in democratic decision-making.

Legitimacy

Legitimacy is typically defined as **'rightfulness.'** It plays a crucial role in distinguishing between power and authority. Legitimacy is the **quality that transforms naked power into rightful authority;** it endows an order or command with an authoritative or binding character, ensuring compliance based on a sense of duty rather than fear.

MEANS OF LEGITIMIZATION OF POWER

Aristotle (Ancient Greece): *"Rule was legitimate only when it operated to the benefit of the whole society rather than in the selfish interests of the rulers."*

Medieval Period: Divine rights theory says that people should obey king because king is representative of God on the earth.

Modern Times: Social Contract Theorists (Hobbes, Locke and Rousseau) provides the concept of consent (will of people).

▷ **Rousseau:** By saying '*The strongest is never strong enough to be always the master unless he transforms strength into right and obedience into duty*', **Rousseau** (The Social Contract) argues that Government was legitimate if it was based on the **'general will'.**

Liberal Tradition:

▷ Legitimacy emerges when power is exercised according to **established rules** and **principles** that are widely accepted.

▷ Rule is based on the consent of the governed, indicating that legitimacy arises **'from below'.**

▷ **Francis Fukuyama** (1992) and other **'End of History'** theorists view liberal democracy as the only stable and enduringly successful form of government. They argue that its virtue lies in its ability to guarantee continued legitimacy through two key mechanisms: **constitutionalism** and **consent**.

Radical Theorists (Marxist Influence):

▷ Legitimacy is created 'from above' through the manipulation of information, beliefs, and knowledge of citizens.

▷ Legitimacy may be a form of **ideological dominance** where regimes maintain control by shaping the ideological context.

Modern Liberals:

TH Green counters the Marxist view and suggests that "will, not force, is the basis of state" and "state hinders the hindrances".

However, **Marxist scholars** like **Gramsci** says that- will for the state is not natural or spontaneous, rather manufactured.

Hannah Arendt believes that, state cannot be legitimate, and power does not require legitimation as power in itself is legitimate.

Thus, authority can be considered as exercise of power which is endorsed by the people (consent and legitimacy). Consent and legitimacy are prerequisites because power can not be exercised solely with the use of force or coercion for long. In the absence of legitimacy, there is possibility of **Governability Crisis** (i.e., protests, violence, resistance, revolution, etc.).

The indications of legitimacy of state are: law and order in society, people paying taxes and respecting national symbols, participation in elections, etc.

CONDITIONS FOR LEGITIMACY

David Beetham (Book- *The Legitimation of Power*) provides the following conditions for Legitimate Power:

1. Power must be exercised according to **established rules (rule of law)**, whether embodied in formal legal codes or informal conventions.
2. These rules must be justified in terms of the **shared beliefs** of the government and the governed.
3. Legitimacy must be demonstrated by the **expression of consent** on the part of the governed (citizens).
4. Other factors include:
   ‣ Independence of judiciary
   ‣ Protection of fundamental rights
   ‣ Welfare provisions.

Concept of Legitimation Crisis by Habermas

Jürgen Habermas, a German sociologist and philosopher, introduced the concept of Legitimation Crisis in the 1970s. It describes a situation where institutions lose the public's trust and confidence in their ability to govern effectively. A legitimation crisis arises from the **tension between the demands of a democratic system and the realities of a capitalist economy.**

Context: The context is **debate on state** between **Liberals** (who believe that state represents will people) and **Marxists** (who believe state as an instrument of bourgeoisie). And **Modern Liberals** argue that welfare state had ended the contradiction of capitalism as it works in the interest of the poor. So, there is no possibility of revolution.

Core Question of Habermas: Whether welfare state has ended the contradiction of capitalism and possibility of revolution?

▷ **Observation of Habermas:** Welfare state can not resolve the contradictions on permanent basis, and it cannot escape the legitimation crisis.

REASONS FOR LEGITIMATION CRISIS:

Welfare state is based on contradictory principles. These are- politics is based on socialism and economics is based on capitalism.

▷ **Socialism in politics:** Since workers have right to vote, politicians will have to offer welfare provision, freebies, etc. to

61

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

gain vote.

▷ **Economics in capitalism:** Welfare state has not abolished private property, giving rise to inequalities. Thus, Marxists argue that permanent solution is social ownership of means of production.

Thus, the cost of welfare programs makes government finances unsustainable (Anthony King calls it as Government Overload), and they need to be supported by private companies or industries. Thus, this results into rolling back of state and people protesting against the hardships (ex- Greece's sovereign debt crisis).

Power and Indian Government and Politics (IGP): Theories like **Weber's power as domination** and **Lukes' three faces of power** help explain the centralization of power in India's **Prime Minister's office (PMO),** revealing how elites shape decisions, agendas, and political discourse in Indian politics.

KEY FEATURES:

▷ **Loss of Public Trust:** The public begins to question the legitimacy of institutions, doubting their authority to make decisions and govern fairly.

▷ **Breakdown of Communication:** Communication between institutions and the public breaks down. Institutions may be seen as unresponsive to the needs and concerns of the people.

▷ **Focus on Efficiency:** Institutions become overly focused on economic efficiency and bureaucratic processes, neglecting social values and democratic participation.

▷ **Crisis in Advanced Capitalism:** Habermas argues this crisis is particularly evident in advanced capitalist societies where economic concerns overshadow social well-being.

▷ **Consequences:** A Legitimation Crisis can lead to social unrest, political instability, and a decline in civic engagement.
   ▸ **Examples:**
      ○ The rise of the New Right in the 1970s can be seen as a response to perceived government overload and a decline in public trust.
      ○ The collapse of communist regimes in Eastern Europe in the late 1980s was partly due to a legitimacy crisis caused by economic stagnation and a lack of political freedoms.

Habermas' Viewpoint: He emphasizes the importance of open communication and democratic participation in restoring legitimacy. He advocates for a **"rational-critical discourse"** where citizens can freely debate and challenge the decisions of institutions.

Contribution of Max Weber to Legitimation Theory

Weber critiqued **Marx** and suggested that state does not represent naked power or force. Rather state represents authority. He suggested **three ideal types of authority** as the basis of legitimacy in the society (traditional, legal-rational and charismatic authority).

According to Weber, in all societies all the three forms exist, but in different permutations and combinations. Only state has **monopoly over right to use force** because people have given their consent.

Ideology

Ideology is a set of ideas and aim to give a world view. Similar to ideology, religion also provides a world view. However, the basis of ideology is reason whereas basis of religion is faith. Secondly, for followers of an ideology, ideology becomes a secular religion.

Tracy projected ideology as **"science of ideas".** He believed that ideas governing life should be based on scientific reasoning, not superstitions. However, later scholars politicised the concept and it became opposite to science.

Thus, in political science, ideology has become a versatile concept guiding political behaviour and policymaking. **Michael Freeden** emphasizes its role as the core of political language. **Karl Marx** highlights how ruling classes use ideology to maintain power, while **Friedrich Hayek** warns against ideological planning, emphasizing individual freedom. These scholars demonstrate that **ideology is not merely a set of beliefs but a powerful force shaping politics and society.**

Karl Mannheim, a pioneer in the study of ideology, defined it as "a more or less systematic and integral set of beliefs and attitudes centring on the basic issues of metaphysics, epistemology, axiology, and praxeology."

MARXIST PERSPECTIVE ON IDEOLOGY

Karl Marx's analysis of ideology provides a critical lens to understand how power dynamics are maintained in society. His insights reveal the mechanisms through which ruling classes perpetuate their dominance and the potential for revolutionary change.

▷ **Ruling Class Tool:** Marx argued that *"the ideas of the ruling class are in every epoch the ruling ideas."* **Antonio Gramsci** expanded this with **"cultural hegemony,"** where cultural institutions maintain control.

▷ **False Consciousness:** Marx introduced *"false consciousness,"* where the working class adopts ruling class ideology.

▷ **Ideological Superstructure:** Marx posited that the economic base shapes the ideological superstructure.

▷ **Revolutionary Potential:** Marx believed the working class could achieve class consciousness and challenge capitalist ideology. **Georg Lukács** explored this as a catalyst for social change.

▷ **End of Ideology: Marx** and **Friedrich Engels** envisioned a communist society without class divisions or the need for ideology, aiming to eliminate alienation and create true human freedom.

Thus, Marx made distinction between science and ideology. He himself called as scientist. From then on, ideology word has been used to refer something as unscientific, biased and political.

LENIN'S VIEW ON IDEOLOGY

▷ **Marxism as the Guiding Ideology:** Lenin believed Marxism was the correct ideology to lead the working class in their quest for revolution and socialism.

▷ **Vanguard Party:** He emphasized the need for a dedicated vanguard party to promote and implement Marxist ideology.

▷ **Class Struggle:** Lenin saw ideology as a reflection of class interests, with the ruling class promoting its own ideology to maintain power.

▷ **Proletarian Dictatorship:** He advocated for a temporary dictatorship of the proletariat to defend and promote Marxist ideas after a successful revolution.

▷ **Propaganda and Education:** Lenin stressed the importance of propaganda and education to spread Marxist ideology among the masses.

Lenin treated ideology contrary to what Marx portrayed. He treated Marxism as science and called Marx as God. Therefore, Lenin is termed as Peter who denied his own master

ANTONIO GRAMSCI ON IDEOLOGY

Antonio Gramsci's concept of **"cultural hegemony"** is central to his interpretation of ideology. He argued that the ruling class maintains power not merely through force but by shaping and controlling the **dominant culture** and **ideology**. Gramsci emphasized the significant role of **intellectuals**, both **traditional and organic,** in disseminating and challenging hegemonic ideology.

Note: Refer Gramsci (WPT) for more details.

LOUIS ALTHUSSER ON IDEOLOGY

Louis Althusser (Book- *Ideology and Ideological State Apparatuses,* 1970) expanded Marxist ideology theory by introducing the concept of **"Ideological State Apparatuses"**. He argued that institutions such as **education, media,** and **religion** play a pivotal role in reproducing capitalist ideology and maintaining social order. Althusser's ideas highlight the **material practices** through which ideology is transmitted and perpetuated.

He gives the concept of interpellation which means we are interpellated i.e., we cannot think independently.

HERBERT MARCUSE ON IDEOLOGY

Marcuse (Frankfurt School of critical theory) explored the concept of **"false consciousness"**. He argued that advanced capitalist societies manipulate people's desires and needs, creating **false needs and maintaining false consciousness** through **consumerism** and **mass media.** Marcuse emphasized the role of ideology in sustaining capitalism.

ESTABLISHMENT OF USSR AND RISE OF COLD WAR

Roughly by mid twentieth century, ideology got linked with Marxism and western scholars started linking Marxism with totalitarianism and projecting liberalism with science.

On the basis of ideology of Marxism, USSR and communist regime was established. The world was divided into two blocks and there was emergence of Cold War which was an ideological battle.

In this backdrop, Marxism became a symbol of totalitarianism.

IDEOLOGY AND TOTALITARIANISM

Hannah Arendt (Book- *The Origins of Totalitarianism*) had clubbed Nazism and Stalinism together and held that these were the examples of totalitarian states. The basis of these states lies in **ideology** and **terror**.

KARL POPPER (THE OPEN SOCIETY AND ITS ENEMIES)

Idea	Description
Protect Open Societies	Popper argues that open and tolerant societies are essential and should be protected from ideologies that aim to destroy tolerance itself (paradox of tolerance).
Reject Historicism	Popper criticizes historicism, the belief that history follows predetermined laws. He Favors a more open approach to change through trial and error.
Promote Open Societies with Critical Thinking	Popper advocates for open, democratic societies that encourage critical thinking over closed, totalitarian ones.
Apply Falsifiability	Popper emphasizes falsifiability (the ability to be proven wrong) as a criterion for both science and ideology. Ideologies should be open to criticism and potential falsification

KARL MANHEIM ON IDEOLOGY

Mannheim argued ideologies aren't just about ruling class interests (like Marx) but are shaped by the social location of a group (workers, elites, etc.).

He distinguished between particular ideologies that reflect a **specific social group's perspective** (like **Liberalism**), and **utopian ideologies** (**Marxism**) that propose radical change for a better future.

Despite being critical, he believed that even utopia is important because it is a ray of for the supressed class.

MICHAEL OAKESHOTT (CONSERVATIVE VIEW)

In his famous quote, Oakeshott mentions- *"In political activity… men sail a boundless and bottomless sea; there is neither harbour for shelter nor floor for anchorage, neither starting place nor appointed destination."*

By this he implies that, man is **not rational,** and ideologies cannot provide political reality. Oakeshott distrusted attempts to use reason to impose grand, pre-determined plans on society.

Oakeshott believed conservatism promotes a more cautious and practical approach to politics, sceptical of grand ideologies that promise to remake society.

End of Ideology Thesis

The idea that ideological conflict between capitalism and communism had subsided in the West during the 1950s and 1960s.

Daniel Bell (The End of Ideology: On the Exhaustion of Political Ideas in the fifties):

The modern state, Bell believed, had eluded the classical problems of industrial societies simply because it had evolved into a post-industrial society, whereby political compromise, the welfare state, and corporations- all buttressed by technical reasoning and interest groups- could channel social expectations into political realities. Bell used the term **"cunning of reason"** to describe how pragmatic problem-solving had supplanted ideological thinking.

Arguments in Favour	Arguments Against
▷ **Post-WWII Consensus:** Broad agreement between political parties in the West led to a decline in ideological division.	▷ **Persistence of Ideological Issues:** Debates on social justice, environment, and role of government continued.
▷ **Focus on Economics:** Economic prosperity became the primary goal, pushing aside ideological debates. (e.g., Edward Shils' report, "The End of Ideology")	▷ **Rise of New Ideologies:** The end of the Cold War did not eliminate ideological differences globally (e.g., rise of religious extremism).
▷ **Convergence of Societies:** Western societies, capitalist and communist alike, were seen as becoming more similar due to shared features of industrialization. (e.g., W.W. Rostow's "The Stages of Economic Growth")	▷ **CB Macpherson argues that in western democracies** are far from being egalitarian. So he believes that ideologies are still relevant for them to be more organised.
▷ **Decline of Class Conflict:** Marx's theory of class conflict based on economics was deemed outdated in developed societies. (e.g., Ralph Dahrendorf's "Class and Class Conflict in Industrial Society")	▷ **C. Wright Mills** (Book- *The Sociological Imagination*) dissents from the "End of Ideology" view. He argues a powerful elite and intellectuals manipulate public opinion, promotes consumerism and militarism, while

▷ **Diminished Political Differences:** Issues in Western democracies became more about marginal economic adjustments than fundamental ideological clashes. (e.g., Seymour M. Lipset's "Political Man") ▷ **Technocratic Convergence:** Industrialization led to similar features across societies, regardless of ideology, such as centralization, bureaucratization, and professionalization. (e.g., J.K. Galbraith's "The New Industrial State")	silencing dissent. The apparent consensus is temporary, with new ideologies like feminism and environmentalism emerging. ▷ **Ralph Miliband** argued that even the welfare state is an instrument of capitalist class. Hence there is need for ideological mobilisation of poor. ▷ **Alasdair MacIntyre** believes that "end of ideology is itself an ideology". It aims to maintain the status quo and mask the interest of capitalist class.

The "End of Ideology" thesis captured a shift in Western politics after World War II, but it underestimated the enduring role of ideology in shaping societies and global conflict. The collapse of the Soviet Union in 1991 further fuelled the idea, but new ideological challenges have emerged since.

Amidst the rising inequalities (Capital in the Twenty-First Century by Thomas Piketty), there is growing appeal for Socialism reflecting the relevance of ideology.

End of History Thesis

Francis Fukuyama's essay, **"The End of History?"** (1989), argues that liberal democracy represents the "end of history" as the ultimate form of government. Fukuyama draws on Hegel's concept of "end of history," suggesting liberal democracy fulfils humanity's quest for self-realization and freedom.

Underlying Fukuyama's thesis was the optimistic belief, inherited from classical liberalism, that industrial capitalism offers all members of society the prospect of social mobility and material security, encouraging every citizen to regard it as reasonable and attractive.

FUKUYAMA'S ARGUMENTS

▷ Triumph of Liberal Democracy: The collapse of the Soviet Union and the spread of liberal democracy mark the victory of this ideology over rivals like communism and fascism.

▷ Fall of Competing Ideologies: Fascism's association with Nazi Germany and communism's economic failures led to their decline.

CHALLENGES TO THE THESIS

▷ Ongoing Conflicts: Critics point to continuing global conflicts, authoritarian regimes, and ideological struggles as evidence that history is not over.

▷ Clash of Civilizations: Some argue the spread of liberal democracy might lead to a clash of cultures rather than universal acceptance of Western values.

CRITIQUE OF THE THESIS

▷ **Resurgent Nationalism:** Critics like **Samuel P. Huntington** argue Fukuyama underestimated the resurgence of nationalism in Eastern Europe after the Cold War.

▷ **Ethnic and Religious Conflicts:** Critics like **Benjamin Barber** argue the thesis overlooks the persistence of ethnic and religious conflicts that can challenge liberal democracy.

▷ **Economic Inequality:** The growing wealth gap within democracies is seen as a threat to their stability (Thomas Piketty's Capital in 21st Century).

▷ **Unresolved Global Issues:** Critics argue that liberal democracies may not have solutions to global challenges like climate change and terrorism.

▷ **Alternative Ideologies:** The rise of authoritarian models in countries like China and Russia challenge the idea of liberal democracy's dominance.

▷ **Cultural Relativism:** Promoting liberal democracy as a universal value can be seen as cultural imperialism, disregarding diverse cultural norms.

▷ **Post-9/11 Re-evaluation:** The 9/11 attacks and the "War on Terror" highlighted the enduring presence of ideological conflict.

After the September 11, 2001, attacks, **Fareed Zakaria** called the events "the end of the end of history", while **George Will** wrote that history had "returned from vacation".

65

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Fukuyama's "The End of History?" sparked significant debate. While criticized for its optimism and overlooking complexities, it remains influential in discussions on political ideologies and the future of liberal democracies.

In response to critiques of his "End of History" thesis, Fukuyama sought to clarify his original proposition. He emphasized that the "end of history" referred specifically to the evolution of the human political system, which he envisioned converging towards the model of the "liberal-democratic West." Furthermore, he acknowledged that his thesis did not posit a utopian future devoid of conflict, nor did it suggest the erasure of cultural distinctions between societies.

Book Review

1. **Concept of Power**

   The Age of Surveillance Capitalism by Shoshana Zuboff (2019)

   Zuboff explains how digital technologies have changed the way power works today. She shows how corporations collect personal data to make profits and control behavior. This new form of surveillance capitalism threatens autonomy, democracy, and human freedom.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
     ○ **Surveillance capitalism,**
     ○ **Loss of privacy,**
     ○ Threat to **democratic values**

   The End of Power by Moisés Naím (2013)

   Naím argues that power is becoming more fragmented and decentralized. Traditional institutions like governments, corporations, and religious bodies are losing influence due to globalization, technology, and changing social values.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
     ○ Decline of traditional power,
     ○ Rise of small actors,
     ○ Fluidity of control in the modern world

2. **Hegemony**

   Hegemony Now: *How Big Tech and Wall Street Won the World by Jeremy Gilbert and Alex Williams (2022)*

   This book explores how hegemony works in today's society through the influence of Big Tech and financial institutions. It focuses on how power is maintained not by force, but by shaping what people believe and accept.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
     ○ Cultural and economic hegemony,
     ○ Power through consent,
     ○ Critique of neoliberalism

   Hegemony and Socialist Strategy by Ernesto Laclau and Chantal Mouffe (1985)

   Laclau and Mouffe redefine hegemony as being based on discourse and ideological struggle. They argue for a form of radical democracy that accepts pluralism while challenging dominant power structures.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
     ○ Discursive hegemony,
     ○ Radical democracy,
     ○ Emphasis on pluralism and inclusion

3. **Ideology**

   Ideology: *A Very Short Introduction by Michael Freeden (2015)*

   Freeden offers a short and clear explanation of ideology. He shows how ideologies shape our political beliefs, identities, and systems of power. He also explains how ideologies can change over time and adapt to new contexts.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
     ○ Ideology as meaning-making,
     ○ Influence on identity and politics,
     ○ Evolution of beliefs

   The Ideological Origins of Inequality by Michael J. Thompson (2020)

   Thompson explores how ideologies support inequality by promoting hierarchical values. He criticizes neoliberalism

for hiding exploitation under ideas like freedom and individual choice.

▸ **Key Ideas:**
  ○ Ideology and inequality,
  ○ Critique of neoliberalism,
  ○ Hidden power in value systems

4. **Legitimacy**

   Legitimacy: The Right to Rule in a Fragmented World by Arthur Isak Applbaum (2019)

   Applbaum discusses what makes government rule legitimate. He focuses on values like justice, consent, and accountability. The book warns about legitimacy crises in democracies caused by corruption and loss of public trust.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
     ○ Moral basis of legitimacy,
     ○ Importance of civic trust,
     ○ Threats from authoritarianism

   Legitimacy and Power Politics by Mlada Bukovansky (2002)

   Bukovansky studies how legitimacy is created through cultural and historical narratives. She uses the American and French Revolutions to show how political ideas shape international legitimacy.

   ▸ **Key Ideas:**
     ○ Legitimacy as a cultural construct,
     ○ Revolutions and narrative power,
     ○ Link between history and political authority

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **Power** is a fundamental concept in political science, referring to the capacity of individuals or groups to influence others' behavior, decisions, and actions. It forms the backbone of political dynamics in society.

▷ **Power** is often defined as the ability to achieve goals through influence, whether through **coercion** or **persuasion**, shaping actions and policies. Political scientists have long debated its sources and mechanisms.

▷ **Hegemony**, a concept popularized by **Antonio Gramsci**, refers to the dominance of one social group over others, not through coercion but by shaping cultural norms and ideologies. It creates consent rather than forcing compliance.

▷ **Hegemony** can be understood as the influence and control exerted by dominant groups over political and cultural institutions. **Gramsci's** theory emphasizes that power is not just military or economic but rooted in **ideology**.

▷ **Ideology** is a system of beliefs and values that guide political actions and shape societal norms. According to **Karl Marx,** ruling classes use ideology to maintain their power and suppress opposing ideas.

▷ **Ideology** plays a pivotal role in defining societal structures. It involves a framework of ideas that helps justify the actions of the ruling class and perpetuate certain values, often reflecting their interests.

Interlinkages

▷ **Power and Political Theory:** Understanding power is crucial in analyzing political theory. Theories of power by scholars like Weber, Lukes, and Foucault offer critical insights into the nature and structure of political systems, helping explain the behavior of political actors and institutions.

▷ **Hegemony and Marxism:** Gramsci's concept of hegemony is directly linked to Marxist theory, which explains how the ruling class maintains power. Ideology and false consciousness in Marxism help further elaborate on how hegemony works to shape societal norms and suppress resistance.

▷ **Legitimacy and State Theory:** The concept of legitimacy is vital when analyzing state theories. Max Weber's types of authority (traditional, legal-rational, and charismatic) link to how states secure legitimacy and justify their power. This is critical when analyzing both democratic and authoritarian regimes.

▷ **Power and Democracy:** Power dynamics influence how democracies function. Theories like Lukes' three dimensions of power or Foucault's micro-powers help explain how elite control, agenda-setting, and public opinion manipulation impact democratic participation and decision-making.

67

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

▷ **Ideology and Global Politics:** Understanding **ideology** is essential in **international relations** and **global politics. Ideologies** such as **liberalism**, **realism**, and **Marxism** shape international diplomacy and the behavior of states, influencing conflicts, alliances, and global governance structures.

▷ **Hegemony and Nationalism:** The idea of **hegemonic power** connects directly to nationalism. Gramsci's **concept of hegemony** explains how dominant groups maintain **control** over national discourse, often shaping **national identity,** promoting **national interests,** and creating unity around common ideals.

▷ **Ideology and International Relations (IR):** Ideology plays a pivotal role in shaping **foreign policy** and **international relations. Marxist and realist ideologies** shape how states interact on the global stage, influencing conflicts, trade relations, and ideological alignments in **international conflicts** and **alliances**.

▷ **Power and Indian Government and Politics (IGP):** Theories like **Weber's power as domination and Lukes' three faces of power** help explain the centralization of power in India's **Prime Minister's office (PMO)**, revealing how elites shape decisions, agendas, and political discourse in Indian politics.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Global Power Dynamics:** Foucault's theory of **power/knowledge** can be applied to understand how digital platforms like **social media** shape public opinion, influencing political narratives, government policies, and creating new forms of **political control** through surveillance and data management.

  ‣ Social media giants like **Facebook** and **Twitter** influence public opinion and political outcomes, as seen in **US elections** and **Brexit.**

▷ **Rise of Authoritarianism:** Gramsci's concept of cultural hegemony helps explain how authoritarian regimes like **China** and **Russia** utilize **ideology** and state-controlled narratives to maintain power, suppress dissent, and maintain legitimacy within both domestic and international contexts.

  ‣ **China's Belt and Road Initiative** uses state-controlled narratives to expand its geopolitical influence, promoting Chinese values through **infrastructure projects.**

▷ **Legitimacy Crisis in Democracies: Habermas' concept of legitimacy crisis** is evident in **liberal democracies** grappling with **economic inequality, populism,** and political disenchantment. These challenges threaten the **legitimacy** of political institutions, driving protests and resistance movements globally, as seen in **France's Yellow Vest movement.**

  ‣ **Protests in Hong Kong** reflect **Habermas' legitimacy crisis,** where the people question the government's authority amidst growing demands for democratic freedoms.

▷ **Corporate Influence in Democracies: Neo-pluralism** (Robert Dahl's revision of pluralism) is relevant today, as corporate interests wield **greater power** in modern democracies, particularly in the **United States,** where lobbying by multinational corporations influences policies on **trade, healthcare,** and **environmental regulations.**

  ‣ **Lobbying by big tech** companies like **Google** and **Amazon** shapes US policies on **data privacy, taxation,** and **antitrust regulations.**

▷ **International Power Shifts:** In the context of **global power relations, Steven Lukes' three faces of power** apply to current geopolitics. The **US-China rivalry** reflects the capacity of these powers to **control agendas,** shape international economic and trade policies, and influence global governance institutions like the **UN** and **WTO.**

  ‣ The **US-China trade war** reflects **Lukes' three faces of power,** with both nations shaping global economic policies and trade agreements.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Power is a multifaceted concept, encompassing not only domination but also influence, control, and resistance. Its dynamic nature remains central in understanding political structures and relations, whether exercised through soft or hard means, or embedded in social structures.

▷ Gramsci's concept of hegemony demonstrates how power is maintained through cultural dominance and ideological manipulation. Ruling elites sustain their authority by shaping societal norms, making their control appear natural, even when contested by marginalized groups.

▷ Ideology shapes societal structures and political processes, acting both as a tool for domination and a catalyst for change. It is through ideologies that power is legitimized, contested, and maintained, influencing governance, revolution, and social movements.

68

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Unit 8: POLITICAL IDEOLOGIES

IDEALISM AND LIBERALISM

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

- ⊕ **Factors like community, culture and nation weaken the hegemony of neo-liberalism today. Discuss. (2022)**
- ⊕ **Liberalism as a revolutionary idea. (2021)**
- ⊕ **"The Political ideology of Globalization is Neoliberalism." Comment. (2016)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: "Revolution in Permanence". (2022)**
- ⊕ **Marx's concept of 'alienation' is an essential part of the reality in capitalism. Explain. (2021)**
- ⊕ **Discuss Marx's concept of class. (2020).**
- ⊕ **What is the contemporary relevance of Marxism? (2019)**
- ⊕ **Differentiate between Freedom and Liberty. Discuss Marx's notion of freedom. (2017)**
- ⊕ **Explain Marx 's understanding of Human Essence and Alienation. (2016)**
- ⊕ **Discuss the relationship between base and superstructure in Marxist theory. (2015)**
- ⊕ **Discuss the key features of pre-Marxist socialist theory. (2015)**
- ⊕ **Define Socialism. Discuss the salient features of Fabian Socialism. (2017)**
- ⊕ **Comment on the view that socialism in the 21st century may be reborn as anti-capitalism. (2014)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: Socialism is a much-used hat, whose original shape no one can define (C E M Joad). (2009)**
- ⊕ **Comment on post-modernism. (2017)**
- ⊕ **Difference between Liberal and Radical forms of Feminism. (2012)**
- ⊕ **Distinguish between liberal feminism and radical feminism. (2019)**
- ⊕ **Comment on Personal is political. (2013, 2010)**
- ⊕ **Comment on Eco-feminism. (2017)**
- ⊕ **Distinguish between liberal feminism and socialist feminism in detail. (2010)**
- ⊕ **Fascism displays an ambivalent stance towards parliamentary democracy. Explain. (2023)**
- ⊕ **Examine the conception of the State in the ideologies of Fascism and Marxism. (2014)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: "Fascism is the destruction of liberal ideas and institutions in the interest of those who own the instruments of economic power." (Laski) (2008)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions address diverse political ideologies, including **neo-liberalism, Marxism, socialism,** and **feminism**. The challenges posed by **community, culture,** and **nation** to **neo-liberalism** are examined, alongside **Marx's** concepts of **alienation, class,** and the **base-superstructure** relationship. The evolving relevance of **Marxism** in contemporary politics is debated, along with the contrast between **freedom** and **liberty**. Feminist theories such as **liberal, radical, socialist,** and **eco-feminism** highlight different approaches to gender and power. Additionally, questions on **fascism** explore its ambivalence towards **parliamentary democracy** and its opposition to **liberal institutions.**

Political Idealism

Idealism is an oldest political ideology. Plato is the originator of Idealism. According to him, "reality is the shadow of ideas" and ideas are real, not material worlds. Thus, Idealists are **rationalists** (reason is source of knowledge) and normativists (emphasis on norms and values).

69

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

EVOLUTION OF POLITICAL IDEALISM

▷ **Ancient Age:** Political Idealism originated in ancient Greece. Plato first time gave concept of Ideal State and gave prescription for good life.

▷ **Medieval Age:** However, it lost the appeal in Medieval age which was clouded by religion or church. The Divine Rights Theory dominated the medieval age (Ex- **Filmer's Patriarcha**). Theory of Divine Rights denote: State is creation of God , King is representative of God on this earth and bears absolute powers. This theory was criticised by the enlightenment thinkers.

▷ **Modern Age:** We see the revival of political idealism and reason in modern age with the advent of renaissance and enlightenment. Idealism was represented by two traditions:

  ▸ **Kantian Tradition:** Gave primacy to individual or human dignity and later influenced the liberal school.

  ▸ **Hegelian Tradition:** Gave primacy to state and later inspired Fascists and Totalitarians.

Locke established that *"Its not God, but man has created the state through social contract"*. Man is prior to state and authority of state is limited by the rights of man.

Thus, renaissance, enlightenment, and reformation culminated into emergence of new political ideology i.e., **Liberalism**.

Liberalism

Liberalism is an ideology of the modern West. John Locke is called the Father of Liberalism. As an ideology, it was fully established in the 19th century in Western Europe and became so dominant that it evolved into a way of life.

A. HISTORICAL INFLUENCES ON LIBERALISM

▸ The rise of modern liberalism as an ideology can be traced back to the decline of feudalism in Europe and the emergence of capitalist societies.

▸ Influenced by the Renaissance, Reformation, and Scientific Revolution, liberalism places the human individual at the centre of its analysis.

B. CHALLENGING MONARCHIES AND ARISTOCRACY

▸ Liberal thinkers challenged the absolute power of monarchies, which claimed authority through the "divine right of kings." Instead, they advocated for constitutional and later representative forms of government.

▸ Liberals also criticized the political and economic privileges enjoyed by the aristocracy and the inherent unfairness of a feudal system where social status was determined solely by birth.

1. Core Assumptions of Liberalism

▷ **Rationality, Equality, and Individual Rights:** Liberalism assumes the rationality of human beings, the inherent equality and freedom of individuals, and the importance of individual autonomy, rights, and liberties. It emphasizes equality, asserting that all individuals are born with equal worth and should be treated as such by society and its institutions.

▷ **Value of Individual Autonomy:** Individual autonomy is central to liberalism, highlighting the ability of individuals to govern their own lives and make decisions based on their own beliefs and values. Liberalism advocates for limited state interference in personal matters, allowing individuals to exercise their autonomy within a just and fair society.

▷ **Concept of Atomistic Individuals:** Liberalism also assumes the concept of atomistic individuals, viewing individuals as independent entities with their own interests and goals.

2. Liberal Views on Society, State, Economy, Equality, and Liberty

Dimension	Description
Definition	▷ Liberalism views society as a marketplace where individuals pursue personal interests, focusing on fulfilling their desires. ▷ These assumptions are challenged by idealists, socialists, and communitarians who prioritise society over individuals.

70

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Source	▷ The state, according to liberalism, is formed by a **social contract** where individuals voluntarily establish a **governing authority.**
	▷ Liberals support a minimal **"night watchman state"** focused on law and order. **Thomas Jefferson** said, "That state governs the least is the one which governs the best."
Legitimacy	Liberals advocate for *laissez-faire* economic policies and a free market, as championed by **Adam Smith's** concept of the **"invisible hand."**
	They believe in minimal state interference in economic activities, allowing market forces to drive economic growth and efficiency.
Nature	Liberals emphasize inherent equality and **equal dignity** of all individuals, focusing on equal opportunities and treatment under the law.
	They advocate **proportional equality,** where fairness is achieved by providing equitable opportunities, acknowledging varied outcomes based on individual efforts.
Enforcement	Liberals approach liberty from two perspectives. Firstly, they see liberty as the **absence of external constraints** on individuals. Secondly, they view **liberty** as the **promotion** and **development of individual capabilities.**

Journey of Liberalism

The ideology of liberalism has undergone significant evolution from its origins in classical liberalism to its contemporary forms.

A. CLASSICAL LIBERALISM

Initially, liberalism emerged as a progressive ideology cantered on the principles of liberty and the protection of individuals. Over time, however, the capitalist class adopted a more conservative stance, prioritizing utility over liberty. Hence, it is termed as philosophy of emerging bourgeoisie class.

This shift resulted in liberalism becoming primarily associated with economic doctrines, dominated by utilitarians, which earned it the derogatory label of "Pig's philosophy."

BASIC TENETS OF CLASSICAL LIBERALISM

▷ **Human Nature and Individualism:** Classical liberalism is rooted in a view of human nature characterized by atomistic individualism, emphasizing the autonomy and rationality of individuals.

▷ **Role of the State:** Classical liberals advocate for a **limited government.** They believe that "state is necessary evil". They confine state's authority to protection for property rights, ensuring law and order, and providing external security.

▷ **Natural Rights and Personal Freedom:** Classical liberals emphasize the importance of natural rights, which are inherent to all individuals and should not be infringed upon by any authority. They reject the notion of a common good that transcends individual interests.

QUOTES OF CLASSICAL LIBERALS

▷ **Herbert Spencer:** He advocates for "survival of the fittest" and supports the concept of competition.

▷ **Graham Sumner:** "A drunkard in the gutter is just where he ought to be according to the fitness and tendency of things". It is no business of the state to remove him out of the gutter.

Evolution within classical liberalism

Within classical liberalism, we see two traditions:

▷ **Libertarian Tradition:** It emphasizes on liberty of individual in economic as well as socio-cultural sphere (ex- LGBTQ Movement)

▷ **Utilitarian Tradition:** It focuses on utility or profit and comes more closer to capitalism.

CRITICISM AND REFORMS

Liberalism's association with economic doctrines and utilitarianism led to criticism, particularly due to the exploitation of workers. This prompted the rise of socialism and left-wing movements, which challenged classical liberalism and forced it to undergo changes and reforms.

JS Mill reformed the utilitarian principles and established primacy of liberty and thus contributed to emergence of libertarian tradition. It is said that Mill was standing at the crossroads. After him, we see emergence of **Modern Liberalism** (20th Century).

Thinkers like **T.H. Green** and **John Dewey** argued for a more active role of the state in ensuring equal opportunities and addressing social injustices, laying the groundwork for modern liberalism.

B. MODERN OR POSITIVE LIBERALISM OR WELFARE STATE

The rise of classical liberalism in the West was influenced by the workers' movement and aimed to protect capitalism. During this period, there was a shift in ideas within liberalism, with scholars such as **J.S. Mill** and **T.H. Green** playing significant roles.

J.S. Mill introduced idealism into liberalism, broadening its philosophical foundations. **T.H. Green** often considered the **father of modern or positive liberalism,** redefined liberty as **"capacity" and argued that true liberty involves the ability to engage in meaningful pursuits in accordance with the laws of our being.**

▷ **Interconnection of Liberty, Rights, and the State:** According to **Green,** "human consciousness postulates liberty; liberty involves rights; rights demand the state." He believes the state should foster and protect social, political, and economic environments, providing individuals the best chance of acting according to their consciences.

▷ **From Liberalism to State Intervention: Harold Laski,** a key figure in Fabian socialism, shifted from liberalism to advocate for a strong state role in the economy. He criticized capitalism and championed socioeconomic rights. His ideas significantly influenced Pandit Nehru, shaping India's post-independence policies towards a more interventionist state.

Laski's Statements

1. *"Every state is known by the rights it maintains"*
2. *"Rights are those conditions of life without which no man can seek in general to be at his best"*
3. *"Social order not based on recognition of claims of persons is based on sand"*
4. *"Rights are claims not empty of duties"*

C. NEOLIBERALISM

Neoliberalism emerged in the late 20th century as a reaction to the perceived failures of the welfare state. Economic challenges like fiscal deficits and the growth of bureaucratic power contributed to its rise. Influential figures like Margaret Thatcher promoted neoliberalism as the "only viable option" (TINA).

CORE PRINCIPLES

Neoliberalism advocates for:

▷ **Market liberalization:** Reducing state intervention, promoting competition, and encouraging free trade.

▷ **Fiscal austerity:** Cutting government spending and reducing public debt.

▷ **Privatization:** Transferring ownership of public assets to private entities.

▷ **Deregulation:** Reducing government regulations on businesses.

PHILOSOPHICAL UNDERPINNINGS

Neoliberalism is based on the belief in the supremacy of the market. Critics often term this "market fundamentalism," arguing it overlooks the market's limitations and its potential to exacerbate inequality.

▷ **Hayek** termed **planning as a road to serfdom:** By terming planning as a useless exercise, he argued that **social justice is mirage, justice is not a feature of society, rather a characteristic of human soul.** He was against progressive taxation (termed it as bonded labour, as money doesn't reach the targeted, rather goes to the pockets of Bureaucrats. He suggested 'charity 'as a better approach to target poverty.

▷ **ROBERT NOZICK -** in *"Anarchy, state and Utopia"* also argued that minimal state is inspiring and right, criticised welfare state and supported night watchman state.

▷ **MILTON FRIEDMAN –** in *"Capitalism and Freedom"* **argued** that Freedom is possible only through the market. If **people want to be free, they should bring capitalism.**

▷ **MURRAY ROTHBARD –** He compared Politicians and Bureaucrats as **gangs of Robbers and thieves,** he called central bank as a legislative fraud, supported free market economy.

Neoliberalism has faced various criticisms from different perspectives:

▷ **Wrong view of human identity:** Critics argue that **neoliberalism promotes an unrealistic and undesirable view of individual identity, disregarding the importance of family, community, and the state in human flourishing.**

▷ **Questioning the Efficiency:** Some argue **that laissez-faire capitalism, promoted by neoliberalism,** does not always produce the most efficient outcomes and fails to prevent the abuse of natural resources.

▷ **Critics of Robert Nozick's entitlement theory** argue that it is an inadequate theory of distributive justice, and its principles of justice in acquisition, transfer, and rectification are subject to criticism.

▷ **Marxist and social liberal scholars** have strongly criticized neoliberalism, comparing it to barbarism and advocating for alternative approaches such as the Doha Development Agenda and Humane Governance.

D. SOCIAL LIBERALISM

Social liberalism emerged as a prominent ideology in response to the prevailing neoliberal hegemony after the Cold War. The work of Amartya Sen, who won the Nobel Prize, played a significant role in shaping this emergence.

▷ **Contribution of Sen:** During this period, discontent grew due to persistent inequality at international and national levels. Sen's research highlighted that neoliberalism primarily favoured the rich without a trickle-down effect, leading to global protests, notably against the WTO in 1999. Sen advocated for "capacity building" for individuals and marginalized communities to access the benefits of globalization.

▷ **Contribution of Stiglitz:** In **"Globalization and Its Discontents,"** Joseph Stiglitz called for reforms in global institutions like the IMF and World Bank, advocating for transparency, democracy, and sustainable development. He emphasized effective markets require sound regulation, competition policy, and technology transfer.

▷ **Contribution of Rawls: John Rawls,** in **"A Theory of Justice,"** provided a philosophical basis for social liberalism, emphasizing aid for the least advantaged and fair equality of opportunity. He criticized utilitarianism and supported egalitarianism as a means to achieve a just society.

Therefore, social liberalism gained prominence as a response to the shortcomings of neoliberalism. It focused on addressing inequality, promoting capacity building, advocating for institutional reforms, and emphasizing fairness and egalitarianism.

Difference between Classical Liberals and Modern Liberals

The ideology of liberalism has undergone significant evolution from its origins in classical liberalism to its contemporary forms.

Dimension	Classical Liberals	Modern Liberals
View on Individual	Respect individual autonomy or atomistic man (Possessive individualism).	Believe in concept of developmental individualism (moral man).
View on Liberty	View liberty as absence of state (negative liberty).	Believe that man can be free in presence of state (positive liberty) and sate can play role in capacity building.
View on Equality	Advocate for equality of opportunity (strict).	Advocate for "fair" equality of opportunity (positive discrimination).
View on Social Justice	Support meritocracy (survival of the fittest).	Merit cannot be a sole criterion and need to include chance factor.
View on Society	View society as market-place where people come for advancement of own interests.	Man is by nature social animal and society is a place of common good.
View of State	State is necessary evil.	State is a source of virtue.

Liberalism as an Evolving Ideology

According to **Sartori**, liberalism is an amorphous and constantly evolving ideology, susceptible to arbitrary interpretations. It is not a rigid creed or dogma but rather a flexible approach to social issues that emphasizes the importance of reason and human innovation.

Due to its adaptable nature, liberalism is often classified into different categories such as negative and positive liberalism. It can also be associated with individualism, democracy, or social democracy depending on the specific context and interpretation.

Moving Beyond Neoliberalism in the Post-Covid Era

The COVID-19 pandemic exposed systemic weaknesses, necessitating a global reset. Priorities include sustainable development and addressing inequalities exacerbated by the crisis.

Neoliberalism's shortcomings such as widening inequality and environmental damage require re-evaluation. The global economic system needs to be restructured with a focus on worker rights, fair taxation, and preventing monopolies.

In the article published in Hindu Business Line **(Covid-19: Is this the end of neo-liberalism?)**, **Jinoy Jose P** addresses answers to following question:

WHY IS IT THE END OF NEOLIBERALISM?

▷ **Globalisation's perils:** The interconnected world exposed vulnerabilities, as seen in the rapid spread of COVID-19.

▷ **Inequality:** Neoliberal policies exacerbated income disparities, leading to social unrest and political backlash.

▷ **Market failures:** The pandemic revealed the inability of the free market to address public health crises, highlighting the need for state intervention.

▷ **Loss of public trust:** The financial crisis of 2008 and the COVID-19 pandemic eroded public confidence in neoliberal capitalism.

WHAT SHOULD BE DONE?

▷ **Rebalance globalisation:** Prioritize public health, worker rights, and environmental sustainability.

▷ **Strengthen the state:** Increase government role in regulating markets, providing public goods, and ensuring social safety nets.

▷ **Redistribute wealth:** Address income inequality through progressive taxation and social welfare programs.

▷ **Global cooperation:** Foster international collaboration to tackle global challenges like pandemics and climate change.

▷ **Ethical capitalism:** Promote business models that prioritize social responsibility and long-term sustainability.

Therefore, the concept of "capital" must be broadened to include environmental and social factors, shifting towards a more sustainable and equitable economic model.

MARXISM

"Workers of the world, unite! You have nothing to lose but your chains!" **- Karl Marx**

Introduction

Marxism, formulated by **Karl Marx,** is a socio-political and economic theory that emerged in the 19th century as a response to the inequalities of the Industrial Revolution and capitalism. It has influenced history by addressing class struggle, power dynamics, and societal transformation.

Marxism, developed by **Karl Marx** and **Friedrich Engels** in the 19th century, critiques capitalism, focusing on class struggle and the exploitation of the proletariat by the bourgeoisie. It advocates for a classless society with collectively owned means of production, aiming for economic and social equality.

74

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Early Socialist Ideas and Marx's Understanding

▷ **Influence and Proposals of Early Socialists:** Early socialists like Saint-Simon, Louis Blanc, and Robert Owen proposed various approaches to address capitalism and social inequality, influenced by the French Revolution. They aimed to create a more centralized economy under state control or establish cooperative model communities instead of competitive ones.

▷ **Louis Blanc's Critique and Proposals:** Louis Blanc criticized competitive capitalism for undermining human personality and causing poverty and social divisions. He proposed state-funded "social workshops" controlled by workers, aiming for a gradual transition to a socialist society.

▷ **Marx's Critique of Early Socialism:** Marx referred to these early socialists as "Utopians" due to their focus on class harmony and non-revolutionary methods. He believed capitalism's inherent contradictions would inevitably lead to its destruction.

▷ **Transition to Scientific Socialism:** Marx and Engels sought to replace Utopian Socialism with Scientific Socialism, developing Marxism as a comprehensive philosophy to analyse social problems and propose solutions. Marx argued that capitalism would ultimately undermine itself, paving the way for a socialist transformation of society.

Influences on Marx

Marx's theoretical framework in Marxism was shaped by:

▷ **German Philosophy:** Incorporating Hegelian dialectics applied to the material world.

▷ **French Political Thought:** Embracing radical change inspired by the French Revolutionary tradition.

▷ **English Economics:** Drawing on classical economists to analyse capitalism and the Industrial Revolution, with a focus on England.

Core Facets of Marxism

Marxism, developed by **Karl Marx** and **Friedrich Engels,** is a socio-political and economic theory that aims to understand and address the inequalities inherent in capitalist societies. Here are the core facets of Marxism:

A. DIALECTICAL MATERIALISM

Dialectical materialism forms the philosophical foundation of Marxism, influenced by Hegel's dialectics and Feuerbach's materialism.

▷ **Dialectics:** Hegel's method of dialectics involves contradictions between opposing ideas (thesis and antithesis) clashing to create a synthesis, driving historical development toward absolute truth. Marx adopted Hegel's concept of history as a process of constant change but focused on social and material conditions rather than intellectual and ideal aspects.

▷ **Materialism:** Marx emphasized that matter, not ideas, is the essence of the universe. Social institutions and human consciousness are shaped by changing material conditions.

▷ **Economic Production and Social Relations:** Marx analysed history through the lens of economic production and its associated social relations. He believed consciousness is determined by material conditions, rejecting the conservative and idealistic elements of Hegelian philosophy.

▷ **Principles of Dialectical Materialism:** Engels elaborated on dialectical materialism, highlighting-

  ▸ **Transformation of Quantity into Quality:** Gradual quantitative changes lead to significant qualitative transformations.

  ▸ **Interpenetration of Opposites:** Contradictions within phenomena drive development.

  ▸ **Negation of Negation:** The resolution of contradictions leads to higher levels of development.

These principles explain social progress and class conflict, key aspects of Marxist theory.

B. HISTORICAL MATERIALISM

Historical materialism, the scientific basis of Marxism, emphasizes economic relations in shaping society's social, political, and cultural dynamics.

▷ **Foundation of Marxism:** Marx rejected Hegel's idealism, arguing that ideologies obscure material conditions. He identified

the mode of production and exchange as pivotal in driving social change and revolutions.

▷ **Base-Superstructure Framework:** Marx proposed a framework where the base (economic base) determines the superstructure (legal, political, cultural aspects). Class conflict, according to Marx, is the catalyst for historical progression and societal transformations.

▷ **Practical Human Activity:** Marx prioritized practical human activity in material life over contemplation. He critiqued ideologies that perpetuate false consciousness among people.

▷ **Criticism and Debate:** Critics, like Karl Popper, challenged Marx's economic determinism, arguing that societal knowledge cannot be governed by rigid laws. Popper also criticized Marx's social engineering and his neglect of factors like religion and nationality in societal analysis.

However, despite criticism, Historical Materialism remains influential despite criticisms, shaping Marxist theory's understanding of history and societal evolution.

C. THEORY OF CLASS CONFLICT IN MARXISM

Marx's theory of class conflict is foundational to understanding societal development through history.

▷ **Historical Materialism and Class Struggles:** Marx posited that history is shaped by continuous class struggles. The ownership patterns of means of production determine relations and generate opposing classes.

▷ **Dynamic Class Relations:** Changes in modes of production lead to shifts in contending classes. Class conflict persists until resolved through social revolution, replacing old social formations.

▷ **Historical Examples of Class Conflict:** Ancient societies saw conflict between masters and slaves. Feudal societies witnessed clashes between lords and serfs. Modern capitalist societies feature conflict between bourgeoisie (capitalists) and proletariat (workers).

▷ **Unique Role of Proletariat:** Marx viewed the proletariat in capitalist society as distinct—a self-conscious majority working for its own interests. Proletarian revolution, envisioned by Marx and Engels, aims to establish social ownership and end class exploitation, leading to communism.

▷ **Criticism and Debate:** Critics argue Marx overly politicized history by focusing primarily on class conflict. Marxists defend class conflict theory as pivotal in understanding societal evolution and revolutionary change.

Marx's theory of class conflict remains a cornerstone of Marxist sociology, influencing critiques of capitalism and aspirations for social transformation towards communism.

D. MARX'S THEORY OF SURPLUS VALUE AND VIEWS ON CAPITALISM

Marx's critique of capitalism centres on the theory of surplus value and its economic implications.

▷ **Theory of Surplus Value:** Labor is the sole source of value in Marx's analysis. Capitalism exploits workers by extracting surplus value, where labour creates more value than what workers are compensated (subsistence wages).

▷ **Fundamentals of Capitalism:** Capitalism is defined by wage labour and private ownership of means of production. Capitalists profit from employing wage labourers who sell their labour power.

▷ **Capitalism's Advantages and Disadvantages:**
  ‣ **Advantages:** Economic progress, global expansion, and urbanization.
  ‣ **Disadvantages:** Expulsion of peasants, exploitation of the proletariat, and alienation of workers, leading to class conflict.

▷ **Inherent Contradictions of Capitalism:** Capitalism's concentration of wealth leads to heightened exploitation and social inequality. Growing organization and empowerment of the working class foster conditions for revolutionary change.

▷ **Path to Socialist Transformation:** Marx foresaw capitalism's collapse due to internal contradictions. A socialist society would replace private ownership with collective control of production means, achieving economic and social equality.

Marx's theory underscores the systemic exploitation within capitalism and anticipates its eventual transformation through revolutionary means towards socialism.

76

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Marx's Critique of the State

Marx's critique of the state was rooted in his philosophical and sociopolitical analysis, contrasting sharply with Hegelian perspectives.

▷ **Rejection of Hegelian Separation:** Marx dismissed Hegel's view of the state as a divine institution and rejected the notion of a distinct civil society separate from the state. He argued that the state and its bureaucracy serve the interests of the dominant economic class, rather than representing universal interests.

▷ **State as a Tool of Class Domination:** Marx viewed the state as a mechanism through which the ruling economic class maintains its power and suppresses other societal groups. He posited that each mode of production shapes the state to serve the economic base of society, particularly evident in capitalist societies where the state acts as the **"executive committee of the bourgeoisie."**

▷ **Relative Autonomy and Bonapartism:** In his analysis of **Bonapartism**, Marx acknowledged that while the state primarily serves the ruling class, it can temporarily gain **autonomy** during **periods of class equilibrium**. This concept illustrates Marx's nuanced understanding of state dynamics within class societies.

Thus, Marx envisioned **a future society devoid of class distinctions and state control.** In this truly democratic society, the political state would cease to exist, replaced by a system where collective decision-making and equality prevail without the need for hierarchical governance.

MARX'S VISION: FROM SOCIALISM TO COMMUNISM

▷ **Eradicating Alienation:** For Marx and Engels, communism wasn't just about economics; it aimed to eliminate alienation from work, society, and human potential. They envisioned a society where everyone could freely develop their talents.

▷ **Path of Dictatorship of the Proletariat (Socialism):** The first step was a transitional phase called the "dictatorship of the proletariat." Here, the working class would seize power and establish a socialist state. This state would:

‣ Abolish private property (seen as the root of alienation).

‣ Centralize power to dismantle the old order.

‣ Distribute resources based on work performed **("from each according to his ability, to each according to his work").**

▷ **The Ideal of Communism:** Following the socialist phase, Marx envisioned a classless, stateless communist society:

‣ Production would be abundant, meeting everyone's needs.

‣ Distribution would shift to "from each according to his ability, to each according to his needs."

‣ The state would "wither away," replaced by a focus on managing resources for the common good.

▷ **Limitations:** Marx and Engels didn't leave a detailed plan for transitioning from socialism to communism. Concepts like the state's **"withering away"** remain unclear.

Marx's Theory of Alienation

Capitalism's Dehumanizing Effects: Marx argues that core features of capitalism, like private ownership and the market economy, lead to worker alienation.

Four Forms of Alienation:

▷ **Product Alienation:** Workers have no control over what they produce or how it's made.

▷ **Work Alienation:** Repetitive, unfulfilling tasks turn work into a burden.

▷ **Social Alienation:** Capitalism pits workers against each other, hindering cooperation.

▷ **Self-Alienation:** Work dominates life, leaving no room for personal growth.

Alienation as a Result and Cause of Class Struggle: Alienation creates a divided society. Workers are exploited by capitalists who control the means of production.

Overcoming Alienation: Marx believed a communist society could eliminate alienation by uniting workers and the means of production.

Alienation is a central concept in Marx's philosophy, providing an analysis of the dehumanizing aspects of capitalism and pointing towards a non-alienated form of labour in a transformed society.

77

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Marxism Post-Marx

Socialism after Marx evolved through various interpretations and adaptations, influenced by historical contexts and the experiences of different countries. Here are some key developments in socialism after Marx:

A. LENIN'S THEORY OF THE STATE AND REVOLUTION

Lenin, in "The State and Revolution," emphasized the necessity of **a professional revolutionary party.** He argued that workers could achieve trade union consciousness but not revolutionary consciousness on their own. Lenin's key contribution was the concept of a professional revolutionary, a dedicated group with unique Marxist insight **to lead the proletariat.**

▷ **Dictatorship of the Proletariat:** Lenin clarified that the dictatorship of the proletariat would not abolish the state; true state abolition would occur only with the establishment of communism. He distinguished between anarchist state destruction and the Marxist theory of the state's gradual withering away. While Marx believed in natural class-consciousness development, Lenin stressed the role of a disciplined communist party in raising political awareness among workers.

▷ **Political Party Structure:** Lenin's political party operated on "democratic centralization," acting as the vanguard of socialism. The party demanded total dedication to the revolution, with members sacrificing personal desires for the collective cause. It was tightly centralized, with strict discipline, hierarchical authority, and rejection of federalism and local autonomy.

▷ **Criticism and Implementation:** The dictatorship of the proletariat often translated to the Bolshevik Party's dictatorship over the proletariat. Critics like **Karl Kautsky** and **Rosa Luxemburg** were sceptical. Kautsky viewed the Bolshevik revolution as a coup, while Luxemburg criticized the limitations on spontaneity, freedom of opinion, and socialist democracy.

IMPERIALISM: THE HIGHEST STAGE OF CAPITALISM

Capitalist Expansion: Lenin, in "**Imperialism: The Highest Stage of Capitalism**," argued that capitalism needed new sources of raw materials and markets, driving Western countries to seek opportunities in Asia, Africa, and South America. He described this stage as monopolistic and parasitic, marking capitalism as reactionary.

Global Conditions for Revolution: Imperialism created global conditions ripe for a socialist revolution, exhausting its mission of promoting revolutions within individual nations.

B. MAOISM

Mao Zedong, following Lenin, led a successful revolution in China by mobilizing the peasant class, which Marx had dismissed as non-revolutionary. Emphasizing armed struggle, he believed "power flows through the barrel of a gun."

▷ **Concept of Contradictions:** Mao introduced the idea of contradictions as the unity of opposites. He differentiated between antagonistic contradictions (e.g., **Chinese people vs. comprador bourgeoisie**) and non-antagonistic contradictions (e.g., **conflicts between peasantry and proletariat**).

▷ **Peasantry as a Revolutionary Force:** Contrary to Marx and Lenin, Mao recognized the revolutionary potential of the peasantry. He led the Chinese revolution with significant peasant support, inspiring other peasant societies in Africa and Asia.

▷ **Lessons from the Soviet Union:** During the Cultural Revolution, Mao learned from Soviet experiences and warned against a new bourgeois class emerging from the party's hierarchy. He emphasized preventing the party's top echelons from becoming a new ruling class.

▷ **United Front Strategy:** Mao acknowledged that the peasantry alone couldn't overthrow imperialism and feudalism in China. He advocated for a United Front strategy, forming alliances with the proletariat, petty bourgeoisie, national bourgeoisie, and non-party intellectuals to oppose imperialism.

▷ **New Democratic Republic:** In 1940, Mao proposed a new democratic republic of China, evolving into the New Democracy system in 1945. The "People's Democratic Dictatorship" included multiple classes: peasantry, working class, petty bourgeoisie, and national bourgeoisie. Mao's approach combined Marxism with nationalism, diverging from the classical Marxist idea of the dictatorship of the proletariat.

Mao's revolutionary methods and class alliances, especially with the peasantry, profoundly influenced Marxist thought and were relevant to various peasant societies worldwide.

C. NEO-MARXISM

Broadly speaking, contemporary Marxist thought—better known as Neo-Marxism—has developed in two directions: Humanist and Scientific. While Humanist School, also known as Critical School, was developed in Frankfurt, Scientific or Structuralist School was developed by Althusser and was influenced by Gramsci.

78

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

D. FRANKFURT SCHOOL

The Critical/Frankfurt School originated in Germany but moved to the University of Columbia in the US due to Hitler's rise to power. Its primary aims were to investigate the decline of labour and communist movements in the West and to understand the masses' attraction to fascism.

E. MAINSTREAM CRITICAL THEORY

Drawing on the Young Marx, it focuses on alienation and human emancipation. Scholars criticized both capitalism and Soviet socialism, viewing the latter as totalitarian and neglectful of **Marx's core concern: freedom.**

Critique of Science and Rationality: Critical theorists argued that science undermines reasoning, degrades human values, and promotes instrumental rationality. They were concerned with the loss of freedom in capitalist and post-capitalist societies, examining mass society and consumerist culture.

Interdependence of Base and Superstructure: Recognizing an interdependence between the base and superstructure, the theorists extensively analysed various aspects of the superstructure to develop an alternative path for social development according to their understanding of Marxism.

Role of Culture, Mass Media, and Advertising:

▷ Theodor Adorno and Max Horkheimer analysed the impact of the **culture industry, mass media, and advertising.** They argued that these institutions create false needs and desires, sustaining capitalism.

▷ Herbert Marcuse, in "One Dimensional Man," highlighted the subjective, critical, and humanist dimension of Marxism. He criticized consumer capitalism for creating a distorted second nature, making people behave like herds and eliminating the possibility of generating revolutionary consciousness.

Jurgen Habermas and the Public Sphere: Jurgen Habermas, a second-generation critical theorist, discussed how mass media hijacks the public sphere, distorts views and choices, and reduces citizens to spectators. He advocated for deliberative democracy and participation in civic affairs.

Therefore, the Frankfurt School provided a **cultural critique of bourgeois society,** focusing on cultural and technological domination rather than just capitalist domination. They aimed to enhance awareness of the roots of domination, undermine ideologies, and compel changes in consciousness and action.

F. STRUCTURALIST SCHOOL

Neo-Marxism, influenced by Marx and developed by thinkers like Gramsci and Louis Althusser, emphasizes **the scientific and explanatory aspects of Marxism.** It seeks to refine Marxist analysis, particularly by examining structures and the roles of cultural, ideological, and social factors.

Gramsci's Theories: Gramsci, a theoretician of superstructure, emphasized the role of civil society in generating false consciousness. He highlighted **the importance of superstructure alongside the base** in Marx's base and superstructure model of Historical Materialism.

Althusser's Contributions:

▷ **Challenging Humanism:** Althusser critiqued humanist themes in Marxism and emphasized the analysis of deep structures in societies, especially their modes of production.

▷ **Multi-Sectoral Analysis:** He proposed a methodology called "Multi-Sectoral Analysis" for analysing capitalist societies, criticizing economic determinism in Marx's theory.

▷ **Russian Revolution:** Althusser attributed the primary cause of the Russian Revolution to economic structure rather than political structure.

▷ **Ideological Interpellation:** He introduced the concept of **"ideological interpellation"** to analyse the relationship between the state and the subject, explaining how regimes maintain control by reproducing subjects who see their social position as natural.

▷ **Ideological State Apparatuses:** According to Althusser, ideologies are instantiated by institutions known as "Ideological State Apparatuses," such as the family, schools, and church, which provide individuals with categories to recognize themselves and their social roles.

▷ **Dictatorship of the Proletariat:** Althusser argued for the necessity of a Dictatorship of the Proletariat, which would replace Ideological State Apparatuses that produce bourgeois subjects with those that produce proletarian or communist subjects.

Thus, Neo-Marxism focuses on scientific analysis, challenges economic determinism, emphasizes the role of superstructure, and explores the relationship between the state, ideology, and subjectification.

Despite challenges and criticism, Marxism retains its relevance today. It serves as an analytical tool, influences political movements and programs, and has been adapted to address the complexities of modern society. Ongoing discussions and

applications of Marxist ideas by scholars and activists underscore its significance in understanding and shaping the world.

SOCIALISM

Introduction

Socialism is **a socio-economic ideology** that advocates for the collective ownership or control of property and natural resources instead of private ownership.

▷ It emphasizes the importance of cooperation among individuals and considers all products of labour as social contributions.

▷ According to socialism, everyone who contributes to the production of goods should have a share in their benefits. Therefore, society as a whole should either own or have significant control over property to ensure the well-being of all its members.

The term 'socialism' is variously understood and defined by various thinkers and schools of thought.

C.E.M. Joad, in his Introduction to **Modern Political Theory (1924)** significantly observed: Socialism proves to be a different creed in the hands of its exponents, varying with the temperaments of its advocates and the nature of abuses which have prompted their advocacy ... **"Socialism, in short, is like a hat that has lost its shape because everybody wears it"**.

Origin of Socialism

Socialism originated in the **nineteenth century** as a response to the **negative social and economic effects of industrial capitalism** in Europe.

▷ It developed as a critique of liberal market society, offering an alternative to the inequalities and hardships faced by industrial workers.

▷ While socialism and liberalism share some Enlightenment principles, socialism emerged as a distinct ideology aiming to challenge and provide an alternative to industrial capitalism.

Socialism Before Marx

Socialism before Marx emerged as a response to the social and economic conditions of industrial capitalism in the nineteenth century. Figures like **Robert Owen, Charles Fourier,** and **Saint Simon** put forth different visions of a socialist society.

▷ **Robert Owen** advocated for cooperative principles and state control of production to alleviate poverty and transform human nature.

▷ **Charles Fourier** focused on making work pleasant and eliminating competition through small producer cooperatives.

▷ **Saint Simon** emphasized the role of science, technology, and industry in social reconstruction, with the state playing a central role. Early socialism was shaped by the harsh conditions faced by the industrial working class, leading to revolutionary alternatives and utopian experiments.

Development and Evolution of Socialism

Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels later developed more comprehensive theories, arguing for the inevitability of a revolutionary overthrow of capitalism. However, as working-class living conditions improved and political democracy advanced, socialist parties shifted toward **legal and constitutional tactics.**

The Russian Revolution of 1917 further divided socialists into revolutionary communists and reformist social democrats. In the twentieth century, socialism spread to countries without industrial capitalism, often blending with anti-colonial struggles. India, for instance, adopted a moderate form of socialism based on the outlook of the Congress Party.

Socialism with Chinese Characteristics

Deng Xiaoping's adaptation of socialism to China's unique context. Introduced in **1982**, it integrates Marxism with market mechanisms and foreign investment while maintaining socialist principles.

▷ It is a pragmatic adaptation that balances planning and market forces.

▷ The economic reforms are focused on modernization, productivity, and foreign investment.

▷ It prioritizes rapid growth of productive forces.

Core Assumptions of Socialism

Socialism can be understood in three distinct ways.

▷ **Economic Model:** Socialism is an alternative to capitalism, often involving collectivization and planning, and modern socialists aim to use it to achieve broader social goals.

▷ **Labour Movement Tool:** Socialism represents the working class and provides a path to political or economic power, its significance tied to the global working-class movement.

▷ **Political Ideology:** Socialism is a political ideology focused on community, cooperation, equality, class politics, and common ownership.

Revolutionary and Evolutionary Socialism

Revolutionary and evolutionary socialism are two distinct approaches within the broader socialist movement, differing primarily in their methods and strategies for achieving socialism.

A. Revolutionary Socialism

▷ **Immediate Overthrow of Capitalism:** Revolutionary socialism advocates for a rapid and complete dismantling of the capitalist system through revolutionary means.

▷ **Class Struggle and Proletariat Revolution:** It emphasizes the necessity of a proletariat (working class) revolution to overthrow the bourgeoisie (capitalist class) and seize control of the state and the means of production.

▷ **Dictatorship of the Proletariat:** Following the revolution, a transitional state (the dictatorship of the proletariat) is established to suppress counter-revolutionary forces and reorganize society on socialist principles.

▷ **EXAMPLES:**
  ▸ **Russian Revolution of 1917:** Led by the Bolsheviks, it resulted in the establishment of the Soviet Union.
  ▸ **Cuban Revolution:** Led by Fidel Castro, it resulted in the establishment of a socialist state in Cuba.

B. Evolutionary Socialism

▷ Also known as social democracy, evolutionary socialism takes a gradualist approach, aiming to achieve socialist values through existing political institutions and reforms.

▷ It employs methods like taxation for wealth redistribution and economic interventions to address capitalism's moral defects, combining equality with a mixed economy and advocating for state authority over certain industries while recognizing the benefits of capitalism.

▷ **Example-** Labour Party in the UK: Historically, the Labour Party has pursued socialist goals through parliamentary means, focusing on expanding the welfare state and workers' rights.

Notable figures in the evolutionary socialist tradition include Eduard Bernstein and members of the Fabian Society, such as Sydney and Beatrice Webb, G.D.H. Cole, Bernard Shaw, Laski, and Tawney. These individuals emphasized the importance of strengthening democracy and sought alternative paths to socialism that did not rely solely on revolution.

Based on these approaches, following are the types of socialism:

a. FABIAN SOCIALISM

Fabianism is a socialist movement that emerged from the Fabian Society, founded in London in 1884. It derives its name

81

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

from the Roman general Fabius Maximus, known for his gradual tactics. The early Fabians rejected revolutionary Marxism, advocating for a gradual transition to socialism, termed evolutionary socialism.

Approach and Strategies

▷ Fabians aimed to introduce socialism incrementally through state and cooperative ownership of industries, enhancing labour's political and trade union power, and promoting social consciousness.

▷ Unlike Marxists, who focused on the working class, Fabianism relied on the middle class to drive social change.

Influence and Key Theorists: Prominent Fabians like George Bernard Shaw and Sidney Webb promoted the strategy of permeation, seeking to influence the mainstream Liberal Party to adopt socialist agendas.

They believed socialism was already progressing unconsciously through public control of services and aimed to reorganize society by transferring land and industrial capital ownership from individuals and classes to the community for the benefit of all.

b. REVISIONISM

Eduard Bernstein, a key proponent of Revisionism, argued that liberal democracy was the essence of socialism. He believed democracy represented a partnership among all adult citizens within a limited government, rather than through class struggle and rule.

Observations and Theories: Bernstein observed that the intensity of class struggle had diminished due to improvements in working-class conditions and the expansion of the middle class, contrary to traditional socialist predictions of a shrinking middle class.

Contrasts with Marxism: Contrary to Marx, Bernstein rejected the necessity and feasibility of revolution. He advocated for a parliamentary approach to socialism, dismissing Marx's materialist interpretation of history, which posited class conflict as the inevitable path to socialism.

c. SYNDICALISM

Syndicalism, or Anarcho-syndicalism, advocates for direct action by the working class to overthrow capitalism and establish a society organized around worker-managed production units.

Opposition to Capitalism and the State: Syndicalists, like Marxists, oppose capitalism and foresee a class war in which the working class will prevail. They view **the state as a tool of capitalist oppression** and inherently inefficient, believing it cannot be reformed peacefully but must be abolished.

Organizational Structure: In a syndicalist community, local syndicates (self-governing associations of producers) serve **as the primary organizational units.** These syndicates coordinate through **local labour exchanges,** or **"Bourses du Travail,"** which function as employment and economic planning agencies.

Direct Action and Tactics: Syndicalists reject political means for achieving their goals and instead rely on direct industrial action.

▷ Georges Sorel, a key syndicalist theorist, introduced the concept of the "social myth" to mobilize workers for revolutionary action. The general strike is a central tactic, aimed at inspiring workers with a sense of collective power and improving organization, even if not immediately successful.

> **Green Syndicalism:** It is an integration of anarcho-syndicalism and environmentalism. It posits that effective environmental protection requires decentralization, regionalism, direct action, autonomy, pluralism, and federation.

d. GUILD SOCIALISM

Guild socialism is a political movement that advocates for workers' control of industry through trade-related guilds, operating in a contractual relationship with the public. It emerged in the UK in the early 20th century and was associated with G. D. H. Cole and influenced by William Morris.

▷ Guild socialists supported state ownership of industry, combined with democratic control by workers through national guilds.

▷ Guild socialism aimed to abolish the wage system and emphasized the importance of both workers and consumers. It sought to replace the exploitative old state with a more egalitarian and participatory system.

e. DEMOCRATIC SOCIALISM

▷ Democratic socialism advocates for political democracy combined with a socially owned economy, emphasizing economic democracy and decentralized planning.

▷ Critique of Capitalism: Proponents argue that capitalism conflicts with core values such as freedom, equality, and solidarity, and assert that socialism is essential to achieve these ideals.

82

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

▷ **Response to Authoritarianism:** Democratic socialism arose in response to the authoritarian nature of Soviet-style regimes. It distinguishes itself from Marxist-Leninist systems by rejecting their governance and economic planning models.

▷ **Approach and Goals:** While aiming for socialism in the long term, some democratic socialists focus on moderating capitalism's excesses through progressive reforms. Others contend that such reforms offer only temporary relief from inequalities, as capitalism's inherent contradictions would re-emerge in different forms.

f. THE KEY DIFFERENCES BETWEEN FABIAN SOCIALISM, SYNDICALISM, AND THE GUILD MOVEMENT

Dimension	Fabian Socialism	Syndicalism	Guild Movement
Origin	Late 19th century England	Early 19th century France, Italy, Spain, and other countries	Early 20th century England
Key Thinkers	George Bernard Shaw, Sidney and Beatrice Webb, H.G. Wells	Georges Sorel, Frantz Fanon	G.D.H. Cole, Harold Laski
Core Belief	Pragmatic, gradual and democratic transition to socialism	Revolutionary overthrow of capitalism by trade unions influenced by **Marxism** and **psychoanalytic** theory of **Freud**	Co-ownership and co-management of production by workers and government (influenced by **theory of class conflict**)
Economic Approach	Partially planned economy, labour reform, and economic internationalism	Direct action and general strikes to achieve worker control	Industrial democracy and worker self-management
State Role	Minimal government, supporting democratic socialism	Independent of the state, bottom-up organization	Community ownership with union control over production
Focus	Labor rights, social justice, living wage, and national healthcare	Workplace democracy, direct democracy, decentralized socialism	Production over distribution, industrial democracy
Method of Change	Democratic reforms and policies	General strikes and direct action	Trade unions as post-capitalist organization, maximum participation
Impact	Foundation of British Labor Party, lasting influence on labour movements	Manifested in movements like International Workers of the World	Comprehensive alternative to capitalist industry organization

83

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

POST-MODERNISM

Introduction

Postmodernism challenges the assumptions of modernity, rejecting the idea of absolute, universal truths. It emphasizes discourse, debate, and democracy as key to understanding and interpreting the world. Originating from experimental movements in arts and culture, it emerged prominently in philosophy after World War II. Friedrich Nietzsche is regarded as a central figure in post-modernist thought.

Evolution of Post-Modernism

▷ **Friedrich Nietzsche:** Proclaimed the "**Death of God**" and questioned absolute truth, emphasizing the relationship between knowledge and power.

▷ **Albert Einstein:** Introduced the **Theory of Relativity**, highlighting subjective perception based on the observer's context.

▷ **Thomas Kuhn:** Proposed the concept of "**paradigm shifts,**" suggesting that knowledge evolves through changing frameworks.

▷ **Louis Althusser:** Developed the concept of "**interpellation,**" which explores how dominant ideologies shape perceptions of reality.

Key Features of Post-Modernism

▷ **Rejection of Absolute Truth:** Asserts that certainty and universal truths are arrogant claims.

▷ **Focus on Discourse:** Prioritizes debate and diverse narratives over singular, dominant truths.

▷ **Relativity and Subjectivity:** Emphasizes that perceptions and knowledge are influenced by context and power dynamics.

▷ **Multiplicity of Truths:** Highlights that various discourses and truths coexist, with some becoming dominant over others.

Prominent Proponents of Post-Modernism

▷ **Jean-François Lyotard:** Introduced the term "**postmodernism**" in 1979, emphasizing "**incredulity towards meta-narratives**" and **advocating for listening to multiple narratives.**

▷ **Michel Foucault:** Developed the concept of "**discourse,**" arguing that knowledge and truth are constructed through narrative frameworks, influenced by power dynamics. Introduced "**governmentality**" and analysed the knowledge-power connection.

▷ **Jacques Derrida:** Introduced "**deconstruction,**" a method of interpreting texts to reveal multiple, often conflicting meanings. Argued that language can lead to misunderstandings and multiple interpretations.

Concept of Governmentality

Foucault's concept of "governmentality" refers to how modern liberal democracies manage and regulate populations through indirect means rather than direct threats or commands. Governmentality reveals the subtle, pervasive ways power operates in modern societies, **influencing behaviour** through **normalization** and **self-regulation** rather than through overt coercion.

A. Mechanisms of Control

▷ **Disciplinary Power and Bio-Power:** Instead of overt coercion, governmentality uses disciplinary power to regulate behaviour by creating a sense of self-regulation. This is achieved through norms and practices that influence how individuals conduct themselves.

▷ **Surveillance:** Foucault cites surveillance as a key example of governmentality. Surveillance, while purportedly for safety and freedom, induces self-censorship due to the fear of being observed. This mechanism extends beyond state control to social institutions like the family, education, prisons, hospitals, and religious institutions.

B. Instruments of Disciplinary Power

▷ **Hierarchical Observation:** Monitoring and evaluating individuals within institutions.

▷ **Normalizing Judgments:** Setting standards for behaviour and assessing deviations from them.

▷ **Examinations:** Using tests and evaluations to scrutinize and categorize individuals.

Relation to Sovereignty: Governmentality functions alongside and interacts with traditional notions of sovereignty and discipline, employing dispersed and non-centralized forms of power.

Production of Truth: Foucault argues that truth is not inherent but produced through various forms of power and constraint. It reflects the interests and norms of those in power.

85

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

FASCISM

Meaning of Fascism

Fascism is an **authoritarian ideology** that emphasizes the **supremacy of the state** and **the collective over individual rights and freedoms.** It promotes the idea of a **unified national community** where personal identity is absorbed into the collective identity of the nation. Central to fascism is the concept of the **"new man,"** an idealized figure characterized by duty, honour, self-sacrifice, and absolute obedience to a supreme leader. This **leader embodies the nation's strength and vision,** and the state's power is exercised through a highly centralized and often dictatorial regime.

Evolution of Fascism

Emergence: Fascism emerged prominently in the early 20th century, particularly during the interwar period, as a reaction against the perceived failures of modernity and Enlightenment values.

▷ **Historical Influences:**

▸ **Post-World War I Instability:** The Treaty of Versailles and the political instability of post-war Europe created fertile ground for extremist ideologies.

▸ **Industrialization:** The disruption caused by industrialization led to **widespread discontent** among the **lower middle class,** who felt squeezed between big business and organized labour.

▸ **Economic Crisis of the 1930s:** The Great Depression undermined democratic institutions and provided an opportunity for fascist movements to exploit public disillusionment.

▸ **Nationalist Tensions:** Nationalist resentment and a desire for revenge after World War I, particularly in Germany, Italy, and Japan, fuelled the rise of fascist ideologies.

Key Features of Fascism

▷ **Anti-Rationalism:** Fascism rejects the rationalist ideals of the Enlightenment, emphasizing the importance of emotions, instincts, and vitalism over reason and intellectual discourse.

▷ **Struggle and Conflict:** Fascist ideologies view struggle, competition, and war as essential for progress. They often have expansionist goals, seeing conflict as a means to achieve national greatness.

▷ **Leadership and Elitism:** Fascism advocates for a hierarchical society led by a supreme leader with absolute authority. It emphasizes the role of a warrior elite and a passive mass population, contrasting with the egalitarian principles of democracy.

▷ **Ultra-Nationalism:** Fascism promotes an extreme form of nationalism, asserting the superiority of one nation over others. It seeks to establish a militant national identity and views other nations as rivals in a struggle for dominance.

▷ **EXAMPLES**

▸ **Italy:** Benito Mussolini's Fascist Party, established in 1919, aimed to revive Italy's greatness and impose a totalitarian regime.

▸ **Germany:** Adolf Hitler's Nazi Party, founded in 1919, transformed Germany into a Nazi dictatorship by 1933, pursuing aggressive expansion and racial purity.

Can Fascism be Regarded as an Ideology?

Challenges in defining Fascism as an Ideology:

▷ **Lack of Cohesive Core:**

▸ **Lack of Rationality:** Fascism is often criticized for lacking a rational and cohesive core. It is described by some as a "jumble of ideas" rather than a unified ideology. Fascists adopted various theories and ideas more for their capacity to

86

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

inspire political activism rather than their logical consistency.

▸ **Political Movement:** Due to its eclectic nature and emphasis on action over ideology, fascism is frequently seen as a political movement or even a political religion, rather than a coherent ideological framework.

▷ **Complex Historical Phenomenon:**

▸ **Diverse Regimes:** The classification of various regimes as fascist is controversial. For instance, regimes like Imperial Japan, Vichy France, Franco's Spain, Perón's Argentina, and Hitler's Germany display different characteristics and may not fit neatly into a single definition of fascism.

▸ **Contemporary Groups:** The relationship between modern radical right groups (e.g., Front National in France, British National Party in the UK) and historical fascism is debated. Terms such as "fascist," "neo-fascist," "post-fascist," and "extreme nationalist" reflect this ongoing dispute.

Fascism's emphasis on action, its **reactionary stance against Enlightenment rationalism,** and its complex historical manifestations make it challenging to categorize strictly as an ideology. Instead, it is often viewed as a **political movement** or **phenomenon** with varying principles and goals that resist a singular ideological label.

Key Proponents and their Ideas

▷ **Friedrich Nietzsche:** Described fascism as a form of nihilism that reverses Enlightenment values. Emphasized charismatic authority and creative destruction.

▷ **Benito Mussolini:** Emphasized totalitarianism, the supremacy of the state, and the role of the state in modernization and national revival.

Contemporary Aspects of Fascism

▷ **Radical Right Resurgence:** Contemporary right-wing movements often operate within democratic frameworks, seeking to transform these systems from within rather than overthrowing them. This contrasts with classical fascism, which sought to dismantle democratic institutions from above.

▷ **New Targets:** Modern forms of fascism focus on a broader range of issues, including racism, homophobia, and xenophobia, often using democratic procedures to enact discriminatory laws and policies. This approach reflects a shift from targeting ideological opponents to broader societal changes.

Fascism's ability to operate within democratic systems today poses significant challenges, necessitating a nuanced understanding and response to its evolving forms and impacts on modern societies.

87

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

FEMINISM

Meaning of Fascism

Feminism is a **socio-political and cultural movement** aimed at advocating for **women's rights** and **equality** across various facets of society. It strives to address and correct both historical and ongoing inequalities, discrimination, and oppression that women face.

Despite encompassing a diverse array of perspectives, theories, and approaches, feminism is **unified by the overarching goal of promoting gender equality** and **dismantling patriarchal structures.**

Core Principles and Goals of Feminism

▷ **Gender Equality:** Feminism seeks to achieve equality between genders by challenging traditional power dynamics that favour men over women. For examples, **Suffrage Movements.**
  ▸ **Gloria Steinem:** *"A feminist is anyone who recognizes the equality and full humanity of women and men."*

▷ **Empowerment:** Feminism encourages women to assert their rights and agency across all spheres of life. For examples, Feminist Organizations working to empower women economically, socially, and politically.
  ▸ **Bell Hooks:** *"Feminism is a movement to end sexism, sexist exploitation, and oppression."*

▷ **Intersectionality:** It recognizes and addresses the intersection of gender with other aspects of identity such as race, class, sexuality, and disability. For instance, feminist movements seek to address challenges faced by Black Women (marginalised groups).
  ▸ **Kimberlé Crenshaw:** Coined the term **"intersectionality,"** emphasizing the need to address multiple forms of discrimination. *"If you want to have a conversation about feminism and intersectionality, then we need to be having a conversation about justice."*

▷ **Social Justice:** Feminism is linked to broader struggles for social justice and human rights, advocating for policy changes to address gender-based discrimination and violence. For example, #MeToo Movement focuses on sexual harassment and driving changes in workplace policies and legal systems.
  ▸ **Angela Davis:** *"I am no longer accepting the things I cannot change. I am changing the things I cannot accept."*

▷ **Critique of Patriarchy:** Critiques patriarchal systems that perpetuate male dominance and gender inequality, advocating for alternative, equitable ways of organizing society. For instance, **Kate Millett** critiqued patriarchal structures in *Sexual Politics* and **Shulamith Firestone** challenged traditional family structures in *The Dialectic of Sex.*

Feminism, through its diverse approaches and core principles, continues to drive discussions and actions towards achieving gender equality and social justice.

Evolution of Feminism

The evolution of feminism is often divided into several waves, each with distinct objectives, challenges, and accomplishments.

First-Wave Feminism (19th and early 20th centuries):	**This wave primarily focused on legal recognition and political rights for women, particularly suffrage.** For example, **Seneca Falls Convention (1848): Adopted the Declaration of Sentiments, calling for equal rights, including women's suffrage.** ▷ **Suffragette Movement in the UK:** Led by Emmeline Pankhurst, used militant tactics like hunger strikes and protests to advocate for women's right to vote. ▸ **Elizabeth Cady Stanton:** Known for her declaration at the Seneca Falls Convention in 1848, which demanded women's right to vote.

Second-Wave Feminism (1960s to 1980s):	This wave expanded the scope of feminism to include **reproductive rights, workplace discrimination, and sexual liberation, challenging traditional gender roles and norms.** For example, **National Organization for Women (NOW) (1966):** Aimed at advancing women's rights and combating workplace discrimination. ▷ **Betty Friedan:** Author of "The Feminine Mystique," which identified "the problem that has no name" and ignited the second wave. ▷ **Simone de Beauvoir:** Her work "The Second Sex" explored the concept of "the other" and examined women's historical definition in relation to men.
Third-Wave Feminism (1990s to present):	This wave **emerged in response to the perceived limitations of earlier waves, emphasizing diversity, intersectionality, and inclusivity.** It acknowledges that women's experiences are influenced by factors such as race, sexuality, and class, and engages with issues related to body image, sex positivity, and pop culture. For Example, **#MeToo Movement (2017):** Instrumental in addressing sexual harassment and rights related to consent and bodily autonomy. ▷ **Bell hooks:** Known for **"Ain't I a Woman?"** exploring the intersection of race and feminism. ▷ **Judith Butler:** Her work **"Gender Trouble"** on performativity challenged traditional notions of gender identity.

Understanding Different Streams of Feminism

A. Liberal Feminism

Liberal feminists assert that women should have equal rights and opportunities in education, employment, and political participation. They contend that gender discrimination and inequality stem from social and cultural practices rather than inherent differences between men and women.

KEY FEATURES OF LIBERAL FEMINISM

▷ **Equal Opportunities:** Liberal feminists **advocate for equal opportunities for women in education, employment, and public participation,** arguing that women should have the same choices and chances as men, free from discrimination.
  ▸ **Mary Wollstonecraft:** *"I do not wish women to have power over men, but over themselves."*

▷ **Individual Rights:** This perspective emphasizes **individual rights and freedoms, including reproductive rights, the right to vote, and the right to work** without gender-based discrimination. Women should have the autonomy to make decisions about their own lives.
  ▸ **John Stuart Mill:** *"The legal subordination of one sex to the other is wrong in itself, and now one of the chief hindrances to human improvement."*

▷ **Legal Protections:** Liberal feminists work to **change discriminatory laws and policies, advocating for legislation against gender-based discrimination, sexual harassment,** and domestic violence.
  ▸ **Betty Friedan, "The Feminine Mystique":** Highlighted the struggles of suburban housewives and questioned societal expectations of women.

CRITIQUES OF LIBERAL FEMINISM

Liberal feminism, while advocating for gender equality through legal reforms and equal opportunities, faces several criticisms regarding its focus on individualism, its inadequate critique of capitalism, and potential elitism.

▷ **Individualism and Choice Feminism:** Critics like **Nancy Fraser** argue that the emphasis on individual choice may overlook structural inequalities.

▷ **Lacks Capitalism Critique:** Socialist feminists, including **Sylvia Federici,** contend that liberal feminism fails to address capitalism's role in perpetuating gender disparities. They emphasize the need to confront deeper economic structures.

▷ **Elitism and Class Bias:** Figures such as **Bell Hooks** criticize liberal feminism for primarily serving middle-class, affluent women. They urge a more intersectional approach that includes the experiences of all women, especially those marginalized by race and socioeconomic status.

89

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

- ▷ **Violence and Reproductive Rights:** Critics like **Susan Brownmiller** highlight a lack of focus on violence against women and reproductive rights within liberal feminism.
- ▷ **Reform vs. Radical Change:** Radical feminists like **Shulamith Firestone** argue for more transformative changes beyond reforms, challenging the patriarchal foundations of society more directly.

B. Radical Feminism

Radical feminism is a theoretical approach within feminism advocating for a fundamental restructuring of society to eliminate male supremacy in all social and economic contexts. It recognizes that women's oppression is compounded by intersecting factors such as race, class, and sexual orientation.

KEY FEATURES OF RADICAL FEMINISM

- ▷ **Patriarchy as the Fundamental Problem:** Radical feminists view patriarchy as the primary source of women's oppression, necessitating the dismantling of male dominance in societal institutions (**Kate Millet**). **Shulamith Firestone** called for societal transformation to eliminate male dominance.
- ▷ **Personal is Political: Carol Hanisch** coined the phrase "personal is political" and emphasized that personal experiences, such as domestic labour and sexual harassment, are political issues rooted in structural inequalities.
- ▷ **Rejection of Reformist Approaches: Andrea Dworkin** criticizes reformist efforts, arguing that only radical societal change can achieve true liberation.
- ▷ **Female Solidarity: Sheila Jeffreys** advocates for female-only spaces to foster solidarity and challenge male dominance.
- ▷ **Critique of Gender:** They view gender as a social construct used to enforce male dominance and advocates for its abolition.

CRITICISM OF RADICAL FEMINISM

- ▷ **Essentialism:** Bell Hooks criticized for essentializing women's experiences, potentially overlooking the challenges faced by women of colour and LGBTQ+ individuals. She suggests for an intersectional approach.
- ▷ **Strategies and Tactics:** Angela Davis called for a balance between revolutionary zeal and pragmatic actions within existing structures.
- ▷ **Rejection of Gender:** It faced challenges in reconciling the rejection of gender with supporting transgender and non-binary rights.
- ▷ **Class and Economic Factors:** This approach has been criticized for not fully addressing economic disparities and class-based oppression.

C. Socialist Feminism

Emerging in the 1960s and 1970s, socialist feminism integrates feminist and socialist principles to address the interconnectedness of gender and class inequalities. It critiques both patriarchy and capitalism as systems that reinforce each other, advocating for a more equitable society by challenging these structures.

- ▷ **Critique of Capitalism:** Critiques capitalism for exploiting labour and exacerbating economic inequalities, particularly affecting women's work.
- ▷ **Economic Equality:** Advocates for achieving economic parity between genders through policies such as equal pay, affordable childcare, and social safety nets.
- ▷ **Collective Action:** Emphasizes the power of solidarity among working-class women to challenge oppressive systems and secure workplace rights and dignity.
- ▷ **Social Reproduction Theory:** Highlights the importance of unpaid labour, such as caregiving and housework, in sustaining both society and the capitalist economy.

CRITICISM OF SOCIALIST FEMINISM

- ▷ **Class Reductionism:** Criticized for potentially reducing women's struggles to class issues alone, neglecting the diverse experiences of women from different backgrounds.
- ▷ **Neglect of Cultural and Social Factors:** Accused of focusing too heavily on economic factors while overlooking cultural and psychological dimensions of oppression.
- ▷ **Revolutionary Approach and Feasibility:** Questioned the practicality of revolutionary goals, with some advocating for a balance between incremental reforms and transformative aims.

90

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

D. Marxist Feminism

Marxist feminism integrates Marxist and feminist theories to critique capitalism's role in exacerbating gender inequality through the exploitation of women's labour, advocating for systemic change.

KEY FEATURES OF MARXIST FEMINISM

▷ **Economic Exploitation:** It highlights how capitalism profits from women's unpaid and underpaid labour.

▷ **Intersectionality:** Recognizes that gender oppression intersects with other forms of oppression, including class and race.

▷ **Structural Change:** Advocates for societal reforms such as wealth redistribution and equal pay to address systemic inequalities.

▷ **Collective Action:** Emphasizes the empowerment of working-class women through organizing and collective struggle.

▷ **Critique of Capitalism:** Views capitalism as inherently linked to patriarchy and inequality, advocating for fundamental societal transformation.

▷ **View of Shulamith Firestone:** "To achieve true gender equality, we must question and transform the very foundations of this system."

CRITICISM OF MARXIST FEMINISM

▷ **Economic Determinism:** Criticized for reducing gender oppression to economic terms, overlooking cultural, psychological, and identity-based factors.

▷ **Class Reductionism:** Often accused of focusing primarily on class issues, potentially marginalizing the experiences of women from diverse backgrounds.

▷ **Revolutionary Strategy:** The emphasis on revolutionary change is seen by some as impractical or idealistic.

E. Post Colonial Feminism

Post-colonial feminism integrates feminist and post-colonial theories to examine how colonialism has shaped and continues to influence gender oppression globally. It critiques traditional gender hierarchies, emphasizes intersectionality, and promotes global solidarity.

KEY FEATURES OF POST-COLONIAL FEMINISM

▷ **Colonial Legacy:** Gayatri Chakravorty Spivak analyses how colonialism's impacts shape contemporary gender relations and oppression.

▷ **Intersectionality:** Chandra Talpade Mohanty critiques Eurocentric feminism for its narrow focus and advocates for a more inclusive approach.

▷ **Voice and Agency:** Centers marginalized women's voices and challenges Western-centric perspectives.

▷ **Deconstruction of Stereotypes:** Works to dispel stereotypes about women in non-Western societies, providing nuanced portrayals. For instance, Leila Ahmed challenges monolithic views imposed by colonial and Western perspectives.

▷ **Global Solidarity:** Vandana Shiva highlights the interconnectedness of feminist struggles worldwide and emphasizes the need for global solidarity to address gender oppression and links ecological issues with gender and social justice.

Post-colonial feminism thus offers a critical lens for addressing global gender oppression, advocating for inclusive and culturally sensitive feminist approaches.

F. Other Streams of Feminism

Libertarian Feminism:	Emphasizes personal autonomy and minimal government intervention to achieve gender equality through principles of liberty and free markets. Wendy McElroy focuses on individual empowerment through freedom of choice and limited state interference.
Ecofeminism:	Links the exploitation of women with environmental degradation, advocating for sustainable living practices. Vandana Shiva calls for addressing gender and ecological injustices together, emphasizing the interconnectedness between feminism and environmentalism.

91

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Womanism:	Centres on the **experiences of women of colour, advocating for an intersectional approach to feminism.** *Bell hooks* emphasizes inclusivity and justice beyond traditional feminist boundaries, highlighting the unique struggles and perspectives of women of colour.
Queer Feminism	Challenges binary **gender and sexuality constructs, advocating for LGBTQ+ rights and visibility.** *Judith Butler* envisions a world free from discrimination based on gender identity and desires, promoting fluidity and diversity in gender expression.
Black Feminism:	Focuses on the unique oppression faced by **black women, emphasizing intersectionality.** *Kimberlé Crenshaw* argues for addressing overlapping forms of discrimination, advocating for justice and equality within racial and gender contexts.
Chicana Feminism:	Addresses the **struggles of Mexican-American and Chicana women, advocating for cultural recognition and empowerment.** *Ana Castillo* explores issues of identity and intersectionality within the context of Chicano culture and feminism.
Transfeminism	Connects feminism with **transgender advocacy, emphasizing gender justice for all identities.** *Julia Serano* advocates for the inclusion of transgender perspectives and issues within the feminist movement, promoting solidarity and understanding across gender lines
Islamic Feminism	Seeks to reconcile **feminist principles with Islamic values, challenging patriarchal interpretations of Islamic texts.** *Leila Ahmed* advocates for gender equality within the Islamic framework, promoting interpretations that support women's rights and agency.
Anarchist-Feminism:	Merges **feminist and anarchist ideologies, critiquing all forms of hierarchy and advocating for decentralized social structures.** *Emma Goldman* envisions a society free from oppression and domination, promoting equality and autonomy through anarchist principles.

NOTE: **Gandhism has been discussed in the Chapter- Indian Political Thought (MK Gandhi).**

Book Review

Liberalism

Liberalism and Its Discontents by Francis Fukuyama (2021)

Fukuyama critiques the **extremes of liberalism,** arguing that its **core principles** have been **distorted**, leading to **social divisions.** He discusses challenges from both the **right and the left,** and stresses the need for a **balanced approach** to maintain **democratic stability** and **social cohesion.**

Liberalism and Its Encounters in India edited by R. Krishnaswamy and Atreyee Majumder (2024)

This book explores the **historical journey** and **current debates** around liberalism in India using **interdisciplinary approaches.** It presents **diverse perspectives** and examines liberalism's **adaptability and relevance** in the Indian context amid **global challenges.**

Socialism

The Socialist Manifesto by Bhaskar Sunkara (2019)

Sunkara traces the history of socialism, critiques capitalism's failures, and presents a vision for a socialist future. He focuses on equality, collective ownership, and democratic participation, arguing that socialism can help solve economic crises and rising inequality.

Futures of Socialism by Colm Murphy (2023)

Murphy examines **British socialism's evolution,** especially during **deindustrialization,** the rise of **neoliberalism,** and **New Labour's reforms.** He explores how these shifts affect **socialist ideology** and its **potential for modern reform.**

Marxism

Marxism and the Capitalist State edited by Rob Hunter et al. (2023)

This book revisits **Marx's theories on the state,** analyzing how **modern capitalist systems** function. It explores how Marxist ideas can help critique and resist contemporary capitalist structures.

The Marx Revival edited by Marcello Musto (2019)

Musto presents **new interpretations** of Marx's work, showing its relevance in understanding **inequality, social change,** and the **crises of capitalism.** The book highlights Marx's **continued influence** on **political theory** today.

Fascism

How Fascism Works by Jason Stanley (2018)

Stanley explains how **fascist traits**—like **propaganda,** the idea of a **mythic past,** and **hierarchies**—resurface in modern democracies. He shows how fascism **exploits fear and division** to **undermine democratic norms.**

Fascism: A Warning by Madeleine Albright (2018)

Albright analyzes **past fascist regimes** and draws **lessons for modern times.** She urges **vigilance against authoritarianism,** warning how **fascist tendencies** can **erode democratic institutions** if not checked.

Gandhism

Gandhi and the Re-Orientation of Modern Political Theory by R. Krishnaswamy (2024)

Krishnaswamy studies **Gandhi's influence** on political thought, especially in reshaping **liberalism** with ideas like **non-violence** and **decentralized governance.** He shows how Gandhi's philosophy can guide **modern debates** on **democracy** and **social justice.**

Gandhi: The Years That Changed the World by Ramachandra Guha (2018)

Guha offers a **detailed biography** of Gandhi's political life, covering his **strategies, leadership,** and **contributions** to the **freedom struggle.** The book reflects on Gandhi's **enduring legacy** in shaping **modern India.**

Feminism

Entitled: How Male Privilege Hurts Women by Kate Manne (2020)

Manne explains how **male entitlement** causes **gender inequality,** impacting women's **freedom and well-being.** She argues this entitlement is **deeply rooted** in society, leading to **systemic injustice.**

The Right to Sex: Feminism in the Twenty-First Century by Amia Srinivasan (2021)

Srinivasan explores modern feminist issues like **consent, pornography,** and **intersectionality.** She calls for a more **inclusive** and equitable feminism to address the **complexities of sexual politics** today.

Introduction for the Answers

Liberalism

▷ **Liberalism is a political ideology** rooted in individual liberty, equality, and limited government. **John Locke's** contributions emphasize the protection of natural rights, advocating for free markets and minimal state interference to ensure **individual freedom** and prosperity.

▷ **Liberalism emerged** in response to the feudal order, advocating for **constitutional government, civil rights,** and **market-driven economies.** Its core belief lies in **individual autonomy** and equality before the law, challenging monarchical rule and aristocratic privileges.

Socialism

▷ **Socialism is a socio-economic system** that promotes the collective ownership or control of resources. **Karl Marx** championed it as a response to capitalist exploitation, aiming to **ensure equality** through redistributive economic policies and **classless societies.**

▷ **Socialism arose as a critique** of the inequalities brought by industrial capitalism, advocating for **state intervention** and the collective ownership of means of production. The aim is **economic equality** and the improvement of working-class conditions.

Marxism

▷ **Marxism, developed by Karl Marx,** critiques the capitalist system, emphasizing the **class struggle** between the bourgeoisie and the proletariat. It advocates for the **overthrow of capitalism,** aiming to establish a **classless society** through revolutionary means.

▷ **Marxism provides a historical framework** for understanding social change, focusing on material conditions and **economic structures.** The ultimate goal is to dismantle **capitalist exploitation** and establish a **communist society** free from class divisions.

Fascism

▷ **Fascism is an authoritarian ideology** that prioritizes **national unity, militarism,** and **state power** over individual freedoms. It opposes democratic principles and seeks a **totalitarian state,** often led by a **strong leader** who embodies national strength and ideals.

▷ Fascism advocates for absolute **state control,** rejecting democratic governance in favor of an **authoritarian regime.** It emphasizes the supremacy of the nation, promotes **extreme nationalism,** and often uses **violence** to maintain societal order and unity.

Gandhism

▷ **Gandhism** is a political philosophy centered around **non-violence (ahimsa), truth (satya),** and **self-reliance.** **Mahatma Gandhi's** approach challenged colonial rule, advocating for peaceful civil disobedience to achieve **political independence** and **social justice.**

▷ **Gandhism integrates moral principles** with political action, emphasizing **non-violence** and **spirituality**. Gandhi's vision of **self-sufficiency,** especially through **Khadi,** sought to empower rural communities and promote **self-rule (Swaraj)** in a post-colonial India.

Feminism

▷ **Feminism advocates for gender equality** and the dismantling of patriarchal structures. It seeks to address **discrimination**, violence, and unequal rights, promoting the **empowerment of women** and **social justice** for all genders in society.

▷ **Feminism is a movement** that spans diverse ideologies and focuses on issues such as **equal rights, reproductive freedom,** and **gender justice.** It challenges **traditional gender roles** and advocates for **gender equality** in all spheres of life.

Interlinkages

▷ **Liberalism:**

  ▸ **Political Theory and Governance:** Liberalism's emphasis on **individual freedom** and **limited government** is central in understanding the formation of **democratic institutions.** For example, **Indian Constitution** incorporates **liberal principles of individual rights** and **fundamental freedoms,** ensuring **democratic governance.**

  ▸ **International Relations (IR): Liberalism in IR** advocates for **cooperation, free trade,** and **global institutions.** Concepts like **democratic peace theory** (that democracies are less likely to go to war with one another) draw directly from liberal values of **cooperation** and **freedom**.

▷ **Socialism:**

  ▸ **Political Economy:** Socialism's **economic models** focus on **collective ownership** and **wealth redistribution.** This relates to the welfare state model in India, where **socialist policies** were implemented post-independence to reduce **economic inequality** and ensure **public welfare.**

  ▸ **Indian Government and Politics (IGP):** The rise of **socialist ideas** significantly influenced India's **Nehruvian socialism,** which emphasized **state-led industrialization, social welfare,** and **redistribution of wealth.** This reflects socialism's role in shaping India's post-independence **economic policy.**

▷ **Marxism:**

  ▸ **Political Theory:** Marxism's theory of **class struggle** and **historical materialism** provides a critical lens for analyzing **political structures.** For instance, India's **caste system** can be analyzed through **Marxist** ideas of **exploitation, class dynamics**, and **revolution**.

  ▸ **International Relations (IR):** Marxist theory's focus on **imperialism** and **capitalism** informs critiques of global power dynamics. Dependency theory in IR is derived from Marxist ideas, explaining how colonial powers and capitalist nations exploit developing countries.

▷ **Fascism:**

  ▸ **Political Ideology:** Fascism's **authoritarianism** and **militarism** connect with the study of **totalitarian states** in political theory. For example, the rise of **Nazi Germany** under **Hitler** reflects fascism's attack on **democratic values** and the use of **state power** for **militaristic expansion.**

- ▸ **Indian Government and Politics (IGP):** Fascist ideologies can be compared with the rise of **authoritarian movements** in India, such as the **emergency rule (1975-77)** under **Indira Gandhi,** where **civil liberties** were curtailed, highlighting **authoritarian control** over **state power.**

▷ **Gandhism:**

- ▸ **Political Ideology: Gandhian thought** of **non-violence** and **Swaraj** influences modern **political ideologies,** emphasizing **decentralized powe**r and **socio-economic justice.** Gandhi's ideas shaped the **Indian independence movement,** promoting **peaceful resistance** and **self-reliance.**

- ▸ **Indian Government and Politics (IGP):** Gandhi's principles of **self-governance** (**Swaraj**) and **non-violent resistance** significantly influenced India's **post-independence policies,** focusing on **grassroots democracy, village empowerment,** and **social justice** through **land reforms** and **panchayati raj** systems.

▷ **Feminism:**

- ▸ **Political Theory:** Feminism challenges **patriarchy** and promotes **gender equality,** connecting with **theories of justice.** Feminist critiques of **liberalism** highlight its failure to address **gender oppression** fully, leading to **social justice** movements for **women's rights** and **representation**.

- ▸ **Indian Government and Politics (IGP):** Feminist theories of **equality** and **empowerment** are reflected in **Indian constitutional provisions,** such as **gender equality under Article 14** and **affirmative action policies** for **women** and **marginalized groups,** aiming to reduce **gender-based discrimination.**

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Liberalism:**

- ▸ **Economic Policies:** The shift towards **free-market capitalism** in the late 20th century, exemplified by **Reaganomics** in the United States and **Thatcherism** in the United Kingdom, reflects liberal principles advocating for reduced government intervention in the economy.

- ▸ **Human Rights Initiatives:** International agreements such as the **Universal Declaration of Human Rights** are grounded in liberal ideals, emphasizing the protection of individual freedoms and equality before the law.

▷ **Socialism:**

- ▸ **Welfare State Development:** Countries like Sweden and Norway have implemented comprehensive welfare systems, including universal healthcare and unemployment benefits, embodying socialist values of social equality and collective responsibility.

- ▸ **Land Reforms:** In nations like Venezuela, land redistribution policies aim to address historical inequalities, reflecting socialist commitments to equitable resource distribution.

▷ **Marxism:**

- ▸ **Labor Rights Legislation:** The establishment of labor laws ensuring fair wages, safe working conditions, and the right to unionize in many countries can be traced back to Marxist advocacy for workers' rights and the critique of capitalist exploitation.

- ▸ **Socialist Movements:** Political parties and movements worldwide, such as the **Communist Party of China,** continue to draw inspiration from Marxist theory in their governance and policy-making.

▷ **Fascism:**

- ▸ **Authoritarian Governance:** Certain contemporary regimes exhibit fascist characteristics, including centralized control, suppression of opposition, and promotion of ultranationalism, reminiscent of mid-20th-century fascist states.

- ▸ **Nationalistic Policies:** Policies emphasizing national supremacy and restricting immigration reflect fascist ideologies, aiming to preserve perceived national purity and strength.

▷ **Gandhism:**

- ▸ **Non-Violent Protest Movements:** The **Civil Rights Movement** in the United States and the **Anti-Apartheid Movement** in South Africa employed non-violent resistance strategies inspired by Mahatma Gandhi's principles.

- ▸ **Sustainable Development Initiatives:** Gandhi's advocacy for **self-reliance** and **simple living** influences contemporary

environmental movements promoting sustainable practices and local economic development.

▷ **Feminism:**

- ▶ **Gender Equality Legislation:** Laws mandating equal pay for equal work, prohibiting gender-based discrimination, and protecting reproductive rights are direct outcomes of feminist advocacy.

- ▶ **Reproductive Rights Policies:** Access to contraception and safe abortion services in many countries stems from feminist efforts to empower women over their own bodies and reproductive choices.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ **Liberalism**

- ▶ **Liberalism's emphasis on individual freedom** and **limited government** has shaped modern democratic societies, advocating for **human rights** and **free markets** while recognizing the need for reforms to ensure equality and justice.

- ▶ **Liberalism promotes individual autonomy** and **equality,** while upholding **free markets** and **democratic principles.** However, it faces challenges in addressing growing inequalities, requiring a balance between freedom and social responsibility.

▷ **Socialism**

- ▶ **Socialism advocates for collective ownership** and **economic equality,** challenging capitalist exploitation. While its ideals face implementation challenges, it remains a powerful force in advocating for **social justice** and **worker rights** globally.

- ▶ **Socialism's vision of equality** and **collective welfare** contrasts with capitalist structures, offering alternatives to wealth inequality. Despite varied approaches, it continues to inspire efforts for a **fairer society** with greater **state intervention.**

▷ **Marxism**

- ▶ **Marxism critiques capitalist exploitation** through **class struggle** and aims for a **classless society.** Despite challenges in its application, its framework continues to offer insights into the inherent contradictions of capitalism.

- ▶ **Marxism's focus on class conflict** and the **revolutionary transformation** of society remains relevant, offering valuable tools for analyzing **economic inequality** and the need for **radical systemic change** in capitalist structures.

▷ **Fascism**

- ▶ **Fascism's emphasis on authoritarianism, militarism**, and **nationalism** threatens democratic values and human rights. Its resurgence in modern politics requires vigilance, as it undermines **liberal democracy** and **individual freedoms.**

- ▶ **Fascism's rise highlights the dangers of unchecked nationalism** and **authoritarian rule.** Its ideology promotes **state control** and **military supremacy,** often at the **cost of civil liberties** and **social cohesion.**

▷ **Gandhism**

- ▶ **Gandhism's principles of non-violence** and **self-reliance** remain a source of inspiration, advocating for peaceful resistance against oppression. It calls for **social justice, equality,** and a return to **moral values** in politics.

- ▶ **Gandhism continues to influence global movements,** promoting **non-violent protest** and **sustainable development.** His vision of **Swaraj** and **social equality** challenges modern **socio-political systems** to prioritize **human dignity** and **peaceful coexistence.**

▷ **Feminism**

- ▶ **Feminism's advocacy for gender equality** challenges traditional power structures, striving for a **just society** where women and marginalized groups are **empowered** and **liberated** from societal and institutional oppression.

- ▶ **Feminism remains a vital movement,** pushing for **gender justice** and **equal rights.** It continues to challenge deeply ingrained **patriarchal structures** and fights for a **more inclusive society** based on **equality** and **freedom** for all.

96

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

UNIT 9: INDIAN POLITICAL THOUGHT

Index

There is a common misconception that India lacks political wisdom and is solely focused on spiritual matters. This view often stems from a **Western ethnocentric perspective.** In contrast to the West's tendency to separate **man and society, nature and culture, dharma and danda** (ethics and politics), India has always embraced a **holistic approach** to life.

According to **Professor V.R. Mehta,** this misunderstanding is due to the West's limited understanding of Indian traditions. **Max Muller** also acknowledged the profound depth of Indian thought on life's questions. Indian texts such as **Manu Smriti, Kautilya's Arthashastra,** and others offer rich insights into political theory and governance.

Indian Political Thought

M. N. Roy   Dharmashastra
B. R. Ambedkar   Arthashastra
M. K. Gandhi   Buddhist Traditions
Sri Aurobindo   Sir Syed Ahmed Khan
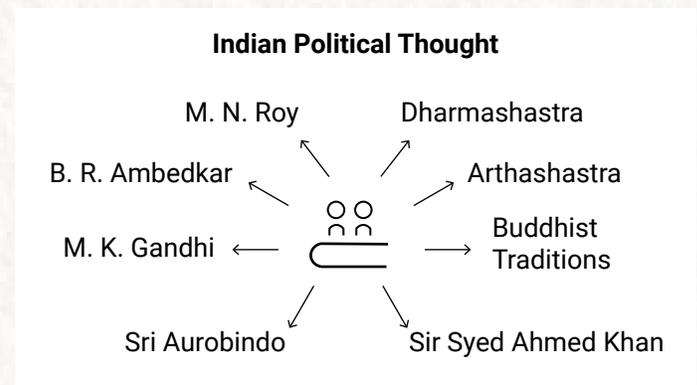
Previous year Questions (PYQs)

- ⊕ **Dharmashastra presents a duty-centric worldview for individuals and communities. Comment. (2024)**
- ⊕ **Compare and contrast Dharmasastra and Arthasastra with reference to State power. (2010)**
- ⊕ **Discuss Kautilya's views on the elements of the State. (2019)**
- ⊕ **What do you understand by the notion of Statecraft? Discuss the theory of statecraft as given by Kautilya. (2017)**
- ⊕ **Analyse, as per Kautilya, the Saptanga theory of the state. (2013)**
- ⊕ **Draw parallels between Arthashastra tradition and the 'Realist' tradition represented by Machiavelli. (2012)**
- ⊕ **Compare and contrast Kautilya and Machiavelli on statecraft. (2009)**
- ⊕ **Explain the sources of ancient Indian political thought. (2020)**
- ⊕ **Examine the significance of Dharma in Ancient Indian political thought. (2013)**
- ⊕ **Buddhist thought on Dhamma facilitates the emancipation of political action. Explain. (2023)**
- ⊕ **Do you think that the Buddhist traditions have lent greater ethical foundation to the ancient Indian political thought? Give your arguments. (2021)**
- ⊕ **Evaluate the contributions of Buddhist tradition to Indian political thought. (2014)**
- ⊕ **Write a note on the Buddhist tradition in Indian political thought. (2012)**
- ⊕ **Sri Aurobindo's idea of Swaraj has deep significance in the Indian social, political and cultural history. Analyse. (2023)**
- ⊕ **According to Sri Aurobindo, Swaraj is a necessary condition for India to accomplish its destined goal. (2017)**
- ⊕ **Discuss Sri Aurobindo's views on Cultural Nationalism. (2016)**
- ⊕ **"Nationalism is not a mere political programme but a way of life like religion." (Aurobindo Ghose). Comment. (2014)**
- ⊕ **Sri Aurobindo's "idea of freedom". Comment. (2013)**
- ⊕ **"The Panchayats with gram Sabhas should be so organised as to identify the resources locally available for the development in agricultural and industrial sectors." Examine the statement in the context of Gram Swaraj. (2022)**
- ⊕ **Examine Gandhi's critique of Modernisation. (2016)**
- ⊕ **Gandhi's views on state. Comment. (2015)**
- ⊕ **Examine the Gandhian idea of village community as an ideal unit of self-governance. (2012)**
- ⊕ **Views of Gandhi and Ambedkar on 'social justice'. Comment. (2011)**
- ⊕ **"When a nation becomes devoid of arts and learning, it invites poverty." (Sir Syed Ahmad Khan). In the light of this statement, assess the role of Sir Syed Ahmad Khan as a reformer in modern India. (2021)**
- ⊕ **Sri Ahmed Khan as modernizer. Comment. (2013)**
- ⊕ **Dr. Ambedkar's idea of social justice leads to 'egalitarian justice' as compared to Rawls' 'justice as fairness' which aims at the notion of 'pure procedural justice'. Comment. (2022)**
- ⊕ **Ambedkar's ideas on constitutionalism. Comment. (2020)**
- ⊕ **Discuss Ambedkar's ideas on 'annihilation of caste'. (2018)**
- ⊕ **Political democracy could not last unless social democracy lay at its base - B.R. Ambedkar. Comment. (2017)**
- ⊕ **Dr. B. R. Ambedkar's idea of state socialism. Comment. (2016)**

98

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

- ⊕ **Examine Ambedkar's critique of Marxism. (2013)**
- ⊕ **Manabendra Nath Roy's political thought highlighted the humanistic aspects of Marxism. Discuss. (2024)**
- ⊕ **Comment on the Marxist and Radical Humanist phases of M.N. Roy's thought. (2012)**
- ⊕ **Radical Humanism. Comment. (2009)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions reflect a deep exploration of **ancient Indian political thought**, with key themes like **Dharmashastra's duty-centric worldview** and the **Arthashastra's** views on **State power** and **statecraft**. The contributions of **Kautilya** to **statecraft** and **Saptanga theory** are examined, along with parallels between **Arthashastra** and **Machiavelli's Realism.** **Buddhist thought,** especially **Dhamma**, is linked to **political action** and **social justice.** In modern political thought, figures like **Sri Aurobindo** and **Gandhi** emphasize **Swaraj, cultural nationalism,** and critiques of **modernisation.** Ambedkar's ideas on **social justice, constitutionalism**, and **the annihilation of caste** continue to shape contemporary discussions, while **M.N. Roy's** contributions to **humanistic Marxism** and **Radical Humanism** offer a nuanced critique of both Marxism and modern political ideologies.

Salient Features of Indian Political Thinking

1. **Enormous Continuity** in both ancient and modern Indian thought. The concept of **dharma** and **danda** (ethics and punishment) has remained consistent throughout.
2. **Communitarian Nature:** Indian political thinking is rooted in a communitarian tradition. It emphasizes the collective good over individualism.
3. **Pluralistic Approach:** Indian political thought has always been pluralistic, accommodating diverse ideas and perspectives.
4. **Cosmopolitanism:** The Indian approach is cosmopolitan, not defining the nation in a narrow territorial sense. **Sant Tukaram** stated, **"The entire world is a family."**
5. Regressive View of History: Unlike the Western optimistic view of progress, Indian political tradition often views history in a more cyclical, regressive manner.

According to **Bhikhu Parekh,** ancient Indian political thought can be broadly categorized into two streams: **Hindu** and **Buddhist** traditions.

Dharmashastra

Professor Bhikhu Parekh argues that the Hindu and Buddhist traditions share many similarities. Both traditions focus on the concepts of **karma** and **rebirth**, with **Buddhism** being seen as the 'rebel child' of **Hinduism**. While Hinduism often represents the **hegemony of Brahmins and Kshatriyas, Buddhism** reflects the alliance of **Kshatriyas and Vaishyas.** Buddhism, unlike Hinduism, challenged the caste system and was more egalitarian in nature.

Dharmashastras and **Dandashastras** share core concepts but differ in their emphasis. Dharmashastras, including **Manu Smriti,** primarily focus on **dharma** (moral law), with **danda** (punishment) discussed peripherally. In contrast, **Dandashastras** focus on **danda**, with **dharma** serving as a secondary concern.

Manu Smriti: Thoughts of Manu

Manu Smriti belongs to the dharmashastra tradition. According to Indian tradition, Manu is the manasputra of Brahma (originator of the universe), and the first law-giver. Manu outlines the dharma for different varnas (social classes). The term dharma cannot be exactly translated into European languages, as it encompasses much more than religion; it refers to the cosmic law that governs both nature and society.

Key Concepts in Manusmriti:

1. **Purusharthas:** The four goals of life – dharma, artha, kama, and moksha – emphasize a balanced life that does not ignore material or sensual pleasures.
2. **Ashrams:** Stages of life – Brahmacarya, Grihastha, Vanaprastha, and Sanyasa – each with specific goals.
3. **Varnas:** The division of Hindu society into four varnas – Brahmins, Kshatriyas, Vaishyas, and Shudras. Each varna is

expected to follow its dharma.

4. **Sanskaras:** Sixteen essential rituals that guide Hindus in their life journey.

Manusmriti and the Origin of State

Manu Smriti discusses the origin of the state through a quasi-contractual theory, where the state is a contract between man and God. Before the state, society experienced matsyanyaya (the law of the strong). People requested Brahma, who created Manu as the first king. Thus, the duty of the people is to obey the laws established by Manu.

Kingship in Manusmriti

In the Indian context, the king does not have divine rights but divine personality. The king is seen as a protector of society, entrusted with rajyadharma (duty of kingship). This is a significant difference from Western notions of divine rights of kings. According to Manu, if a king does not follow dharma, he will face spiritual consequences.

Critique of Manusmriti

Manusmriti remains a highly controversial text. It has been both admired (e.g., by Dr. S. Radhakrishnan) and criticized (e.g., by Ambedkar, who urged Dalits to reject Manusmriti). Feminists have criticized it for its inferior status of women and its rigid caste system. Despite these critiques, Manusmriti continues to play a central role in defining Hindu personal laws.

Manu Smriti and other Indian texts offer a rich political framework, emphasizing a cosmic law of dharma, which guides the conduct of both individuals and rulers. Although criticized, they provide profound insights into governance, justice, and societal structure.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **Dharmashastra**, like the **Manusmriti**, outlines a worldview where individuals and communities are guided by **dharma** (law). **Dharma** dictates people's roles, responsibilities, and ethical conduct. It emphasizes the importance of maintaining **social harmony** and **justice** by ensuring that each person follows their prescribed duties based on their **varna** (social class) and stage of life. The text also highlights the role of the **king** in upholding justice and enforcing **dharma** within the state.

▷ Dharmashastra, particularly the Manusmriti, serves as a foundation for understanding Hindu law and societal structure. As A. L. Basham argues, it defines not only moral conduct but also the roles of individuals in maintaining societal order and justice.

Interlinkages

▷ **Theories of State:** The concept of **Dharma** in **Dharmashastras** (e.g., **Manusmriti**) reflects the role of the state in maintaining social order and justice, much like the liberal state's role in securing individual rights and ensuring justice in society.

▷ **Justice: Dharmashastras** emphasize justice through **dharma** and **danda** (punishment), with a focus on social hierarchy and moral conduct. This can be compared to **Rawlsian justice** (fairness) and communitarian critiques (justice within community structures).

Manusmriti asserts that justice must be commensurate with one's **varna** and role in society, showing an early example of **distributive justice** tied to social roles, differing from **Rawls' theory of justice** as fairness.

▷ **Equality: Social, Political, and Economic**

Dharmashastras discuss equality in terms of social roles, with a focus on caste-based duties. This contrasts with modern ideas of **equality**, such as **affirmative action** or **social justice**, which advocate for equal opportunities regardless of caste or social status.

▷ **Indian Political Thought: Sir Syed Ahmed Khan, Sri Aurobindo, M. K. Gandhi, B. R. Ambedkar**

Gandhi criticized the social hierarchy and untouchability sanctioned by **Dharmashastras** like **Manusmriti**. **Gandhi's non-violence** (**Ahimsa**) directly challenges the social order proposed by **Manusmriti**.

Similarly, **Ambedkar's** critique focused on the oppression of **Dalits** in the name of **dharma** and **varna** system. He urged the **Dalits** to abandon the **Manusmriti**, advocating for **equality** and **human rights.**

▷ **Indian Government and Politics: Federalism**

Dharmashastras emphasize a **centralized system** where the **king** has absolute authority over laws. This can be linked to the **center-state relations** in India, where uniformity vs regional autonomy remains a debated issue.
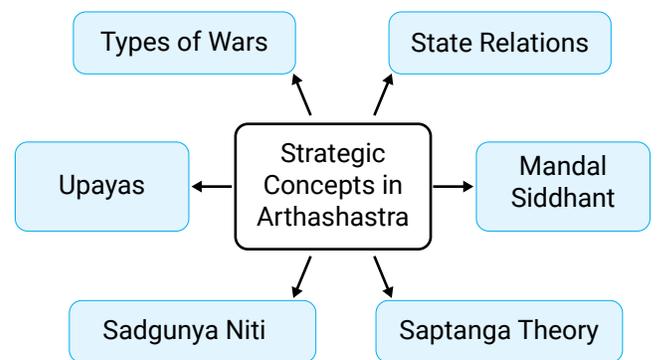
Contemporary Relevance

▷ **UCC:** The **Dharmashastra**, with its emphasis on varna (social order) and **stri dharma** (duties of women), continues to influence modern debates on **gender equity** and **religious personal laws.** The ongoing discussions around the **Uniform Civil Code (UCC)** often draw on traditional norms from **texts** like **Manusmriti** to critique **patriarchal biases** in Hindu personal law. **Feminist movements** highlight contradictions between **constitutional equality** (Articles 14-16) and practices derived from **Dharmashastra**, such as unequal **inheritance rights** and **temple-entry restrictions for women.**

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ As **Bhikhu Parekh** notes, Dharmashastras provide a foundational understanding of governance rooted in ethics, though modern critiques highlight the need for reform in caste and gender equality.

▷ Dharmashastras like **Manusmriti** offer deep insights into governance and ethics but must be viewed critically, especially in light of modern values of equality and justice.

Arthashastra

▷ Kautilya defines **statecraft** as *Arthashastra*, where **Artha** denotes material well-being. The king's **primary objective** is to secure the **material well-being** of the people, as "material well-being is supreme, and all other goals—**dharma, kama,** and **moksha**—depend on it."

▷ In ancient times, **land** was the main source of material well-being, and acquiring **land** was a state's main goal. Hence, **neighbors** are considered **natural enemies,** and the relation between states is that of **war**. *Arthashastra* is essentially a textbook on **geopolitics,** emphasizing **war, strategic planning, balance of power,** and **geopolitics**.

▷ **Kautilya** challenges the Western view that **Indians lacked strategic culture, as George Tanham** had claimed. In contrast, Kautilya's work proves this wrong. The rediscovery of **ancient Indian wisdom** is being explored, particularly in the 21st century with a renewed focus on this **strategic culture.**

Strategic Concepts in Arthashastra: Types of Wars, State Relations, Upayas, Mandal Siddhant, Sadgunya Niti, Saptanga Theory

Main Ideas in Kautilya's Arthashastra
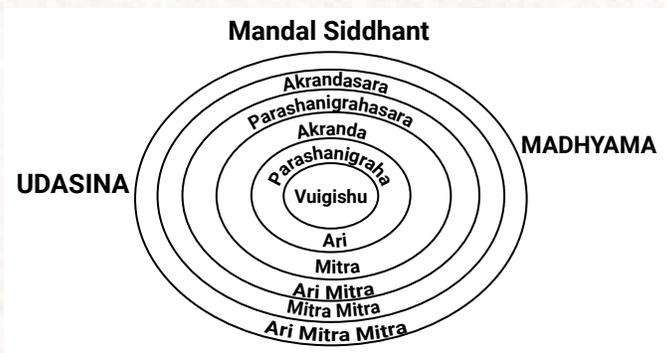
1. State of Relations

According to Kautilya, **relations between states** are **war-based,** where the **strength of a lion prevails.** Kautilya is a **realist** who believes interstate relations are a **struggle for power.** He follows the **offensive realism** school, where **offense** is the best defense.

Mandal Siddhant:

Kautilya's **Mandal Siddhant** explains the **strategic environment** using concentric circles. Neighbors are natural enemies, and there's no permanent friend or enemy. This **realist** view stresses the importance of acquiring land for the welfare of the state. The **Mandala** also advises a flexible approach to allies and enemies, which constantly changes based on territorial expansion.

The Mandala represents a set of concentric circles of power, and the king must constantly adjust alliances and rivalries. There is no permanent friend o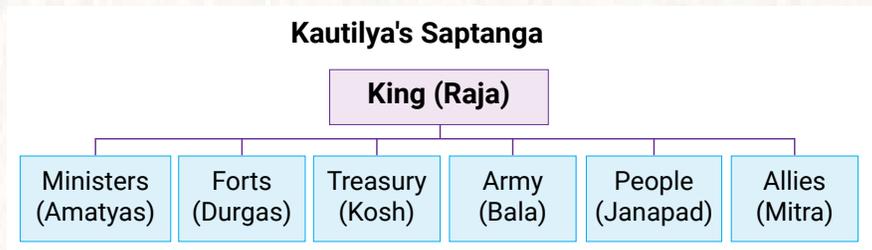r enemy in international politics. Kautilya emphasizes **flexibility** in foreign policy, with the **Vijigishu** (conqueror) striving to expand power.

Mandal Siddhant — UDASINA, MADHYAMA, Akrandasara, Parashanigrahasara, Akranda, Parashanigraha, Vuigishu, Ari, Mitra, Ari Mitra, Mitra Mitra, Ari Mitra Mitra

101

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI
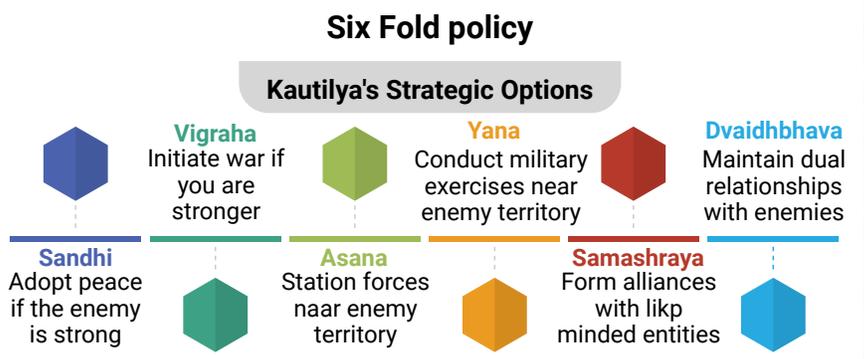
2. Saptanga Theory (Saptaprakar Theory)

Kautilya's **Saptanga Theory** (Seven limbs of the state) defines the key elements that ensure state power:

▷ **King:** The central element; a smart king can convert weaknesses into strengths.

▷ **Amatyas (Ministers):** Essential for governance, especially ambassadors, whose integrity is crucial.

▷ **Forts (Durg):** Strategic military installations for offense and defense.

▷ **Janapath:** The welfare of the people and ensuring their support.

▷ **Kosh (Treasury):** Ensuring financial stability for both daily expenses and emergencies.

▷ **Bala (Force):** Maintaining a well-trained army.

▷ **Mitra (Allies):** Building strong alliances to strengthen the state.

Kautilya's Saptanga

King (Raja)					
Ministers (Amatyas)	Forts (Durgas)	Treasury (Kosh)	Army (Bala)	People (Janapad)	Allies (Mitra)

3. Sadgunya Niti (Six Fold Policy)

Kautilya's Six Fold Policy includes strategies such as peace, war, diplomacy, and using strength to balance or confront opponents based on situational needs.
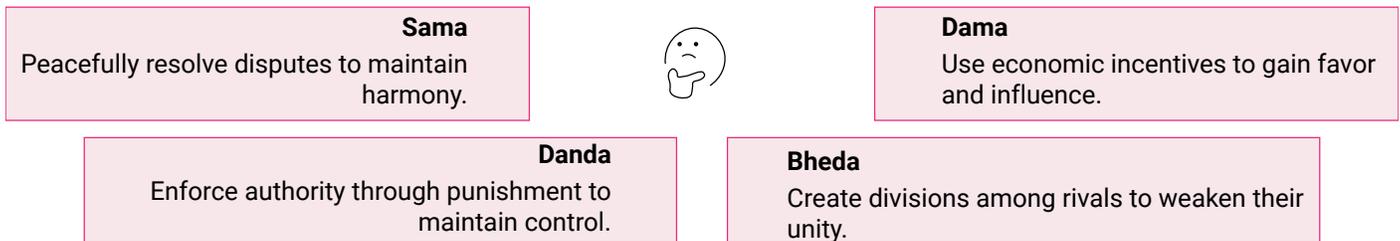
Six Fold policy

Kautilya's Strategic Options

Vigraha Initiate war if you are stronger

Yana Conduct military exercises near enemy territory

Dvaidhbhava Maintain dual relationships with enemies

Sandhi Adopt peace if the enemy is strong

Asana Station forces naar enemy territory

Samashraya Form alliances with likp minded entities

4. Policies of Vijigishu

4 Upayas (Fourfold Policy)-

The Fourfold Policy—Sama (conciliation), Dama (bribery), Danda (punishment), and Bheda (division)—offers practical methods for dealing with rivals and ensuring state dominance.

Which strategy should be employed to achieve political or strategic goals?

Sama
Peacefully resolve disputes to maintain harmony.

Dama
Use economic incentives to gain favor and influence.

Danda
Enforce authority through punishment to maintain control.

Bheda
Create divisions among rivals to weaken their unity.

5. Types of Wars

Kautilya identifies three types of wars: **Parakrama Yuddha** (open war), **Koot Yuddha** (guerrilla war), and **Tushnim Yuddha** (proxy war), each suited to different circumstances in statecraft.

Kautilya's Types of Wars

Types of Wars		
Parakrama Yuddha	Koot Yuddha	Tushnim Yuddha
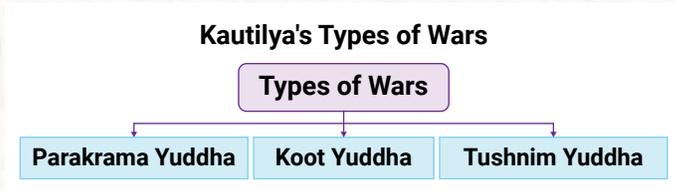
6. Administration

Kautilya stresses that corruption is a natural part of public life but must be controlled. Corruption weakens the state and harms its ability to serve the people. He suggests measures like monitoring officials, transferring them to avoid corruption, and punishing the whole chain of wrongdoing, including both bribe-givers and receivers.

102

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

7. Espionage

Kautilya emphasizes the importance of intelligence gathering through spies. He suggests using various people, such as students, servants, or even sadhus, to collect information. He also highlights psychological warfare, where sadhus can scare enemy leaders with predictions, demonstrating Kautilya's strategic and manipulative approach to statecraft.

Kautilya's work Arthashastra belongs to the tradition of Dandashastra, focusing primarily on statecraft. It discusses both dharma and danda, showing continuity with Manu Smriti.

> **Kautilya in Practice**
>
> The content connects **Kautilya's Rajmandalan Theory** to India's foreign policy, particularly India's strategic engagement with **Iran** and its response to the **2020 Ladakh standoff with China.** In Ladakh, India adopted a **defensive posture** while simultaneously strengthening its alliances with global powers, reflecting Kautilya's principle of **balancing power** and maintaining **security** without direct confrontation.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ Kautilya, the **father of Indian strategic thought** and political economy, was the chief advisor to **Chandragupta Maurya.** He helped overthrow the **Nanda dynasty** and establish the **Mauryan empire.** His famous work, the **Arthashastra,** focuses on creating an ideal, **corruption-free state** by blending **dharma** (laws) and danda (statecraft).

▷ Kautilya, often called India's **Machiavelli,** played a key role in the rise of the **Mauryan Empire.** His book, **Arthashastra,** laid out a practical vision for running a strong and successful state, focusing on **diplomacy, economics,** and **power**. His ideas aimed at creating a **corruption-free** and **prosperous state,** shaping ancient Indian political thought.

Interlinkages

▷ **Arthashastra and Democracy:**

  ‣ Kautilya's emphasis on a strong, centralized ruler contrasts with democratic ideals. While democracy promotes shared power and governance by the people, **Arthashastra** advocates for a monarch's authority, making it an important point of comparison when discussing **authoritarian vs democratic governance.**

▷ **Arthashastra and Gandhian Thought:**

  Kautilya's focus on power, war, and state expansion contrasts with **Gandhi's** non-violent approach. Gandhi's ideas of **self-reliance and non-violence** challenge Kautilya's vision of **war** as essential for state prosperity, highlighting differing perspectives on governance and state relations.

▷ **Arthashastra and International Relations (IR):**

  ‣ Kautilya's **Arthashastra** connects to **Realist theories in IR** by focusing on the **balance of power, territorial expansion,** and **war** as means of securing national interests. His strategic ideas on diplomacy and warfare align with modern **geopolitical strategies** in international relations.

▷ **Comparison with Machiavelli**

  ‣ Kautilya and Machiavelli both focus on power, strategy, and statecraft, but Kautilya's approach is more **territorial** and **expansionist,** while Machiavelli's is more about **internal control** and **stability.** Kautilya emphasizes **diplomacy, warfare,** and **territorial acquisition,** with a **realist** outlook on state survival. In contrast, Machiavelli is more about maintaining power through **manipulation** and **alliances**.

  ‣ Both thinkers accept the **use of religion** and **morality** to serve the state, but Kautilya sees the king as a **wise and ethical ruler,** while Machiavelli advocates for a more **ruthless and pragmatic leadership.** Kautilya's theories on **corruption** and **espionage** offer practical governance solutions, while Machiavelli's focus is on **internal power dynamics** to ensure the survival of the state.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ Kautilya's **Arthashastra,** emphasizing self-sufficiency and strong defense, aligns with India's **Atma Nirbhar Bharat** defense focus. Initiatives like **Make in India** for defense production reflect Kautilya's realist approach, aiming for a self-reliant state to ensure national security and reduce foreign dependence.

▷ **Economic Statecraft and Governance:** Kautilya's focus on wealth and resource management in the **Arthashastra** resonates with today's **economic policies,** like **India's Atmanirbhar Bharat** proving that his economic principles still apply to modern **statecraft and governance.**

103

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ In "Kautilya's Arthashastra: An Appraisal," **Professor Pushpendra Kumar** highlights the timeless relevance of **Kautilya's Arthashastra** in both ancient and modern governance. He states, "Kautilya's insights into the interplay of ethics and strategy provide a framework not only for ancient rulers but also for modern policymakers facing challenges in a globalized world." This perspective underscores Kautilya's lasting influence on **contemporary political thought.**

▷ In **Medha Bisht's** book, **Kautilya's Arthashastra: Philosophy of Strategy,** she concludes that **Kautilya's Arthashastra** is a profound exploration of statecraft, where effective governance demands a balance of **ethics and strategy.** Bisht states, "The synthesis of dharma and artha in Kautilya's thought offers timeless insights into the complexities of **power** and **morality** in political life."

Buddhist Political Thought

According to **Professor Bhikhu Parekh,** the Indian tradition emphasizes continuity rather than change, making Hindu and Buddhist traditions qualitatively similar. **Buddhism** can be seen as the "rebel child of Hinduism," sharing concepts like **Karma** and **rebirth**. The primary difference lies in social dynamics: **Hinduism** represents the hegemony of **Brahmins** and **Kshatriyas**, while **Buddhism** reflects the alliance of **Kshatriyas** and **Vaishyas**.

Key Contributions of Buddhist Political Thought

Important contributions of Buddhist Political Tradition are discussed below:

1. **Against a Tyrannical Ruler:** This concept emphasized the king's duty to protect subjects and uphold justice, binding him to the law.

2. Democratic Nature of the Buddhist Sangha: Prof. Rhys Davids noted that the Buddhist Sangha operated on democratic principles, with decisions made through resolutions and majority votes in regular meetings, following established rules and quorum requirements. Thus, we can trace the roots of deliberative democracy to Buddhist political thought.

3. **Theory of the Origin of the State:**
   ‣ Moral Decline and Social Order: The state's necessity emerged from societal corruption, and the institution of kingship resulted from a social contract with a distinguished individual.
     ○ Dighanikaya: This text presents a theory where kingship arose due to a decline in moral and physical conditions, leading people to appoint a "Maha Sammata" to maintain order in exchange for a share of their harvest. This challenges the Vedic divine origin theory.

4. **Principle of Righteousness:**
   ‣ **Dharma over Danda:** Unlike Brahminical emphasis on danda (punishment), Buddhism prioritized upholding dharma (righteousness) positively. The king and subjects were bound by the same ethical principles.
     ○ **Chakravartin Concept:** The ideal ruler or "chakravartin" was envisioned as one who governed with universal supremacy. Internal administration was based on reciprocal love and affection, while foreign conquests were achieved through righteousness.
     ○ **Foreign Policy:** Buddhism advocated peaceful relations with neighbouring states and conquest by winning hearts (dhammaghosha or cultural conquest). Indian foreign policy of Panchasheel is inspired by Buddhist tradition.

5. **Origin of Kingship:**
   ‣ **Democratic Elections:** Buddhist literature, unlike Brahminical texts, portrays kingship as arising from popular elections. The Jatakas describe instances where kings were elected by the purohita or elders based on their qualities, known as "Maha-Sammata" (accepted by all).
   ‣ **Social Contract:** The king's authority was derived from a contract with the people, who could revolt against a tyrannical ruler. This concept emphasized the king's duty to protect subjects and uphold justice, binding him to the law.

6. **Rejection of Caste System in Governance:**
   ‣ **Rejection of Caste System:** Buddhist political thought denies the caste restrictions on kingship and the sanctity of the king's person, contrasting with Brahminical norms.
   ‣ **Voluntary Selection of Occupations:** Superior positions were determined by virtue and knowledge, not caste.

These contributions highlight a distinct, democratic, and ethical approach to governance in Buddhist political thought, emphasizing moral integrity, social contract, and the importance of righteousness in leadership.

Concept of Dhamma as a Tool of Political Emancipation

Dhamma, derived from the Sanskrit word **Dharma**, encompasses **moral, ethical,** and **social duties** essential for maintaining order in society. It represents righteousness, propriety, and justice, forming the foundation of individual and collective conduct. In Buddhism, **Dhamma** is crucial for personal and societal well-being, guiding actions towards ethical living and harmonious coexistence.

1. **Control Over State Power: Dhamma** served as a check on unrighteous rulers, ensuring ethical governance within large empires.

105

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

2. **Ideal Kingship:** Buddhist ideals integrated **Dhamma** into state governance, aiming for a just social order and ethical statehood, exemplified by Emperor **Ashoka**.

3. **Autonomy of the Samgha:** Separation of authority (āṇā) from **Dhamma** preserved the moral integrity of the Buddhist monastic community, safeguarding against monarchical despotism.

4. **Cosmic Force of Dhamma: Dhamma** was seen as a cosmic force ensuring ethical conduct of rulers, influencing political decisions and natural outcomes.

5. **Practical Measures:** Buddhist rulers supported the **Samgha**, prohibited monk involvement in politics, and enacted ethical laws reflecting **Dhamma's** influence.

Dhamma's integration into political philosophy facilitated ethical governance, regulating state power and promoting societal well-being in ancient Buddhist societies.

Buddhist Texts	Main Ideas
Digha Nikaya	**Origin of the State:** Initially, an ideal state existed, but corruption led to the need for central authority (similar to Hobbes' social contract). **Mahasammat (King)** **Role of King:** Elected by the Buddhist Sanghas to uphold **Dharma**, ensuring both **material** and **spiritual well-being** of the people. **Chakravarti Samrat:** Focus on spreading **Dhamma** rather than conquering land.
Buddhacharita (by Asvagosa)	**Reformatory Justice:** No death penalty; emphasis on **compassion** and reformative justice. **Ascetic King:** King as a **symbol of sacrifice** and moral authority.
Ashokavadana	**Philosopher King: Ashoka** exemplifies the ideal king. **Ashoka's Edicts:** Promote **religious toleration, non-violence,** and conquering minds, not lands.
Jataka Tales	**Good Governance:** Kings should take care of the welfare of the entire universe, providing the best governance.
Aggana Sutta	**Destructive Qualities: Greed, arrogance, lust,** and excessive punishment destroy kingship.
Maha Sudassana Sutta	**Moral Institution:** The state should be seen as a **moral institution** with the king embodying **gentleness, liberality, modesty,** and **selflessness**.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **Buddhist political thought,** emerging around the **6th century BC** during the time of the **Mahajanapadas**, emphasizes governance based on **ethical principles, compassion,** and **non-violence.** While often associated with spirituality, scholars like **Upinder Kaur** and **Gail Omvedt** view Buddha as a significant **political philosopher,** advising kings on **good governance** and **interstate relations.**

▷ Rooted in **Buddhist teachings,** this political philosophy emphasizes the role of **wise leaders** who govern with **compassion**. It highlights the importance of **ethics** in politics, ensuring decisions prioritize **harmony, justice,** and the **welfare of all beings** in society.

Interlinkages

▷ **Theories of State (Pluralist, Marxist):** Buddhism's focus on **compassionate kingship** and **moral governance** offers an alternative to **authoritarian state models.** It challenges **Marxist** notions of class struggle by promoting the idea of **benevolent rulers.** Buddhist thought also intersects with **pluralism** by recognizing diverse views in governance.

▷ **Indian Political Thought (Dharmashastra, Arthashastra):** Buddhist political thought contrasts with **Hindu Dharmashastra** in its **ideal king** approach, where Buddhist kingship emphasizes **moral virtues** over rigid social hierarchies. It presents a more **egalitarian** vision compared to the **caste-based** system in **Hindu political thought.**

▷ **Justice:** Buddhism's ideas of **Dhamma (morality)** and **compassionate governance** intersect with the concept of **justice** by advocating for rulers who ensure **moral governance.** The Buddhist **ideal of kingship** aligns with ideas of

social justice, which focuses on the **welfare of all subjects,** similar to modern justice theories.

▷ **Democracy:** Buddhist governance emphasizes **non-violence, egalitarianism,** and **participatory decision-making,** which resonates with **democratic principles.** Buddhism's view of **moral kingship** can be linked to **contemporary ideas of democratic rulers** who serve the public welfare and ensure justice for all.

▷ **Foreign Policy:** Buddhist ideals of **tolerant governance** and **non-violence** influence India's **foreign policy** approach, promoting **peaceful coexistence.** India's **foreign policy** regarding **regional conflicts** and promoting **democratic values** reflects the Buddhist commitment to **peace and diplomacy.**

Contemporary Relevance

▷ In countries like **Bhutan, Gross National Happiness** is influenced by Buddhist principles, focusing on **people's well-being** over material growth.

▷ Buddhist teachings on **peace, non-violence,** and **diplomacy** align with **India's foreign policy** approach, emphasizing **peaceful conflict resolution** and **soft power.** India's efforts in engaging with neighbors through **SAARC** and its active role in **UN peacekeeping** reflect these values.

▷ **Buddhist Political Thought & Environmental Politics:** Buddhist ideas of **interdependence** and **harmony with nature** contribute to the **global environmental movement.** The concept of **compassionate governance** can guide countries in addressing climate change through **sustainable** and **eco-friendly policies,** inspired by Buddhist ethics of minimal harm.

▷ **Buddhist Political Thought & Human Rights Movements:** Buddhism's emphasis on **compassion** and **equality** supports contemporary **human rights movements.** The **promotion of equality, social justice,** and **protection of marginalized communities** is mirrored in **Buddhist practices,** influencing movements advocating for the **rights of minorities** and **disenfranchised groups** globally.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Buddhist political thought supports an **egalitarian, republican,** and **peaceful** approach, focusing on **justice, liberty,** and **equality,** while emphasizing **reformative justice.** It aligns with the **Socratic tradition** of **virtue ethics.**

▷ Buddhist political thought offers a timeless model of **compassionate governance,** where **ethical leadership** fosters **justice, peace,** and the **welfare of all beings,** ensuring a society free from suffering and inequality.

Sir Syed Ahmed Khan

"When a nation becomes devoid of arts and learning, it invites poverty. And when poverty comes, it brings in its wake thousands of crimes."

"Now I am convinced that these two nations will not work unitedly in any cause. At present there is no hostility between them. But, on account of the so-called educated people, it will increase a hundred-fold in the future."

– Syed Ahmed Khan

A **Reformist Leader: Sir Syed Ahmed Khan** was one of the most formidable figures of the late nineteenth-century India. He emerged on the Indian scene as one of the great reformers, educationists, and modernizers within the Muslim community.

Reconciliation Efforts Post-1857 Revolt: Witnessing brutal repression by the British after the 1857 Revolt, Sir Syed Ahmed Khan attempted reconciliation between the Muslims and the British. He wrote Asbab-i-Baghawat-i-Hind published in 1858, in which he tried to explain various underlying causes of the Revolt. His central argument was that the Revolt came about because the British were unaware of Indian opinion, as Indians were deliberately kept out of governance.
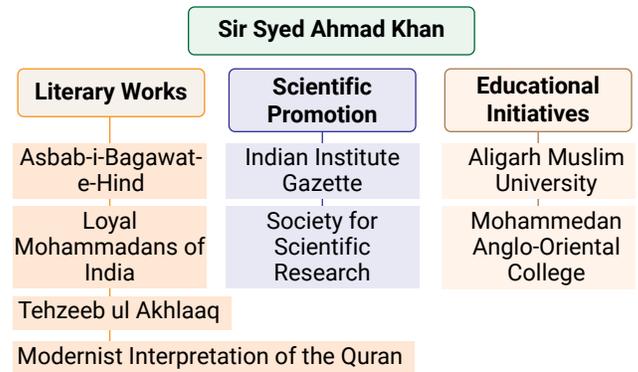
KEY FACTS...

Known for: *Asbab-i-Baghawat-i-Hind,* founder of Mohammedan Anglo-Oriental (MAO) College, and Tahzib-ul Akhlaq

Key ideas: Great reformer, educationist, and modernizer within the Muslim community.

Impact: His observations and recommendations are highly relevant for the Muslim community in present times.

Sir Syed Ahmad Khan's Contributions to Muslim Society

Sir Syed Ahmad Khan		
Literary Works	**Scientific Promotion**	**Educational Initiatives**
Asbab-i-Bagawat-e-Hind	Indian Institute Gazette	Aligarh Muslim University
Loyal Mohammadans of India	Society for Scientific Research	Mohammedan Anglo-Oriental College
Tehzeeb ul Akhlaaq		
Modernist Interpretation of the Quran		

Advocacy For Loyal Muslims

In *The Loyal Mohammedans of India (1860)*, he argued that not all Muslims were the enemy of the British, as was commonly believed. He pointed out that many Muslims had supported the British during the tumultuous days of the Revolt. From this time onwards, Syed Ahmed Khan devoted his entire life to reconciling the British and Muslims. He also sought the British support for the **Mohammedan Anglo-Oriental (MAO) College.**

Contribution to Modern Education

Syed Ahmed Khan's objective was to bring his community out of stagnation. He believed that **modern education** was essential for the **empowerment of the Muslim community.** He emphasized the need for Muslims to adopt modern scientific education, alongside their religious teachings.

"Muslim youth should carry the book of science in one hand and the Holy Quran in the other hand."

He identified the causes of stagnation in the Muslim community, attributing it to their adherence to **orthodox and irrational customs** and traditions. His contributions include:

▷ **Scientific Society at Ghazipur (1863, UP):** The basic objective was to translate scientific literature into **Urdu**, focusing on subjects such as **mechanics, electricity, pneumatics, and natural philosophy.**

▷ **Indian Institute Gazette:** This journal, started in 1866, was published by the Society, promoting modern education and science among Muslims.

▷ **MOHAMMEDAN ANGLO-ORIENTAL (MAO) COLLEGE IN 1875:** Syed Ahmed Khan founded **MAO College** with the goal of imparting **modern education** to Muslims while preserving their **cultural heritage.** The doors of the college were open to all, regardless of religion.

▷ **TAHZIB-UL-AKHLAQ (MAGAZINE):**Through his magazine **Tahzib-ul Akhlaq,** Syed Ahmed Khan criticized many practices out of tune with modern trends. He advocated for a fresh interpretation of the **Quran**, believing that science and **Islam** were not contradictory.

108

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **Sir Syed Ahmad Khan** was a prominent **19th-century Islamic scholar, reformist,** and **philosopher**. During a time when the **Muslim community** in India faced **discrimination** from the **British** due to their involvement in the **1857 mutiny**, he advocated for **modernization** and **scientific education** as key to uplifting his community and securing their future in British India.

Interlinkages

▷ **Western Political Thought**
  ▸ SSAK's ideas on **scientific inquiry** and **modernist interpretations of religion** align with **Enlightenment ideals.** His emphasis on **rationalism** and **education** echoes **John Locke's** ideas on **individual liberty** and **empirical knowledge.**

▷ **International Relations**
  ▸ SSAK's advocacy for **Muslim loyalty to the British** and his **strategic relationship** with colonial powers connects to **colonialism** and **imperialism**. His pragmatic approach can be analyzed in terms of **realism** in international relations, where **state survival** takes precedence over ideological conflicts.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Sachar Committee Report**
  ▸ The report highlights the **educational backwardness** of Muslims, echoing the **emphasis** on education for social upliftment.

▷ **Low Representation in Civil Services (AIS)**
  ▸ The **low Muslim representation (3%)** in civil services underscores the need for **modern education** and **scientific learning**, as advocated.

▷ **Socio-economic Disparities**
  ▸ Muslims' **socio-economic lag** mirrors the call for **education and rational thought** to overcome economic and social challenges.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Sir Syed Ahmad Khan provided **enlightened leadership** at a critical time for the Muslim community. His efforts for **educational empowerment** and his promotion of **scientific learning** parallel the contributions of **Raja Ram Mohan Roy** among Hindus. Despite facing controversy, he remains the **tallest leader** among Muslims. His ideas are still **relevant today,** offering valuable guidance to **misguided youth** and helping them avoid radicalisation and extremism.

▷ **Sir Syed Ahmed Khan** remains an influential figure in modern Indian history, offering a **pragmatic, realistic,** and **progressive approach.** His efforts in education and **community development** have lasting significance, particularly for the **Muslim community** in India.

109

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Manabendra Nath Roy (1887–1954)

"Freedom is the most important factor for the preservation of human dignity, the exercise of freedom leads to progress."
"Spiritually free individuals at the helm of affairs will smash all chains of slavery and usher in the freedom of all."

- M.N. Roy

M.N. Roy was an **Indian revolutionary, radical activist,** and **political theorist,** as well as a **noted philosopher** in the 20th century.

He was a **founder** of the Mexican Communist Party and the Communist Party of India, and also a delegate to the **Communist International** and Russia's aide to China.

Roy **reformulated Marxian philosophy** in a way that emphasized **freedom**. Inspired by Marx's **humanism**, Roy considered Marx as a **humanist** and lover of human freedom.

KEY FACTS...

Methodology: Blend of Marxist analysis, empirical observation, rationalism, and critical thinking.
Known for: Founder of the Communist Party in India and Mexico, Radical Humanism.
Key ideas: Radical Humanism and Radical Democracy.
Impact: As a communist, he laid a strong foundation for the leftist movement and politics in India. He also influenced debates on socialism and alternative economic systems.

Ideational Journey of M.N. Roy

M.N. Roy's ideational journey unfolded in three major phases: **Nationalism (Revolutionary), Marxism,** and **Radical Humanism.**

▷ **A. M.N. Roy as a Revolutionary Nationalist (First Phase)**

▸ **Nationalist Phase:** In his early years, Roy was influenced by **Jatin Das** and became a militant revolutionary fighting for **India's independence.** He advocated for **direct action** to overthrow British colonial rule. Roy was a member of various revolutionary organizations, emphasizing **armed resistance** for freedom.

▷ **B. M.N. Roy as Marxist (Second Phase)**

▸ **Context:** Disillusioned with the **Indian National Congress (INC),** Roy turned to **Marxism.** He became a founding member of the **Communist Party of India** and the **Communist Party of Mexico.**

▸ **Consciousness:** Inspired by Marx's idea that **"existence determines consciousness,"** Roy viewed human beings as products of their material conditions.

▸ **Critic of Gandhi:** In the **1920s**, Roy criticized Gandhi and INC, accusing them of being controlled by the **bourgeoisie**. He opposed Gandhi's approach of mixing **religion with politics.**

▸ **Criticism by Sudipto Kaviraj:** Roy's Marxism was criticized as lacking **autonomy**, a term coined by Kaviraj to describe his dependence on external ideologies.

▷ **C. M.N. Roy as Nationalist - Member of INC (Third Phase)**

▸ **Admirer of Gandhi:** Later, Roy acknowledged Gandhi's success in raising awareness among the masses and joined the **Indian National Congress** to **radicalize it from within.**

▸ **League of Radical Congressmen:** He founded the **League of Radical Congressmen** to push for more progressive, grassroots-driven changes.

▷ **D. M.N. Roy on Radical Humanism (Fourth Phase)**

▸ **Philosophy of Freedom:** Roy's **Radical Humanism** emphasized **individual freedom** and the **importance of human beings** in shaping their destiny. He rejected Marx's deterministic view and proposed a **human-centered** philosophy.

▸ **Manifesto of Radical Humanism:** Roy advocated for **Radical Democracy,** emphasizing **grassroots participation** in governance and the need for **ethical, rational political practice.**

Radical Humanism and Radical Democracy

▷ Roy advocated for **radical democracy**, where individuals, not the state, would control power. This would allow for **direct participation** in governance, aiming for a **free society** where social and political structures are reformed.

▷ Radical humanism emphasizes **freedom from superstition** and **fear**, advocating for a society based on **reason, ethics,** and **scientific understanding** of nature.

110

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Introduction for the Answers

▶ **M.N. Roy** was an **Indian revolutionary, radical activist, political theorist,** and **philosopher** of the 20th century. He represented the rationalist tradition in Indian political thought, asserting that **liberalism** and **communism** only addressed **partial human needs,** advocating for a more comprehensive approach.

▶ A **visionary thinker, M.N. Roy** transcended nationalism by advocating for **radical humanism** and critiquing traditional ideologies. His contributions to the development of **democracy**, **freedom**, and **social reform** have left a profound impact on India's intellectual and political landscape.

Interlinkages

▶ **Western Political Thought:** M.N. Roy's critique of Marxism and his emphasis on radical humanism can be linked to Western political thought, especially his criticism of historical materialism and dialectical materialism. His idea of a secular humanist society resonates with thinkers like John Locke and Immanuel Kant who emphasize individual freedom and rationality.

▶ **M.N. Roy's Criticism of Marxism**

  ▸ During his time in the **Communist Internationale,** Roy debated with **Lenin** over the future of revolutions in colonized nations.

    ○ **Lenin's view:** A two-stage revolution (supporting bourgeoisie parties, such as the INC in India, initially before moving to a communist revolution).

    ○ **Roy's view:** He argued that the masses in India were **sufficiently conscious** and did not need bourgeois support. He called for a **single revolution** to oust imperialist forces.

▶ **Indian National Movement:** Roy's initial involvement with the **Indian nationalist movement** and his eventual shift towards radical Marxism links to **Indian nationalism.** His critiques of **Gandhi** and the **Indian National Congress** reflect his dissatisfaction with their strategies, leading him to push for a more **revolutionary approach** for India's freedom.

▶ **Comparative Politics:** Roy's support for direct democracy and **rejection of bourgeois nationalism** connects his ideas to **comparative politics.** His advocacy for a **radical democracy** aligns with contemporary debates on **participatory governance** and the balance between **state power** and **individual freedom.**

Contemporary Relevance

▶ **Advocacy for Rationalism and Scientific Thought:** Roy's emphasis on rationalism and empirical evidence supports contemporary movements for **science education** and **critical thinking** to challenge superstition and promote social progress.

▶ **Political Activism and Revolutionary Thought:** Roy's call for **revolutionary change** and **social justice** inspires modern-day activists working to address **inequality** and push for **systemic reform** through collective action.

▶ **Secularism and Pluralism:** Roy's vision of a **secular state** that embraces **diversity** aligns with current debates on **secularism** in India, advocating for **inclusive policies** and **communal harmony** in a pluralistic society.

▶ **Humanism and Rationalism:** Roy argued for the importance of **reason**, **critical thinking**, and **scientific inquiry** in guiding **social** and **political transformations.** This remains relevant today in combating **superstition** and **caste-based politics.**

▶ **Critique of Capitalism:** Roy's ideas on **economic democracy** and **social ownership** offer alternative perspectives for tackling **economic inequality** and the influence of **corporate politics.**

▶ **Grassroot Democracy:** Despite constitutional amendments, true **grassroot democracy** remains a distant goal. Roy's model of **radical democracy,** aiming for **direct participation**, is highly relevant for India today.

▶ **Role of Education:** Roy believed that **education**, not armed struggle, was key to achieving **social revolution.** This idea still resonates in the context of **empowering the masses** through education for true liberation.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ M.N. Roy's vision of a rational, scientific, and secular society remains relevant even today. **Sudipto Kaviraj** calls him a "remarkable failure" because Indian society has not fully embraced the rationalist approach Roy advocated. Deep-rooted traditions and resistance to change have slowed this progress. Still, Roy's ideas on **social justice, rationalism, and secularism** continue to inspire efforts for a better and more modern society.

▷ M.N. Roy's intellectual journey, marked by his evolving views on Marxism, nationalism, and humanism, underscores his commitment to societal transformation. His ideas continue to inspire debates on **freedom, democracy,** and **social justice** in contemporary political thought.

▷ In today's world, where **technology** has brought us closer yet **nationalism** divides, Roy's **ethical-political** principles and **rational-social morality** offer solutions for addressing **human strife.** His vision of **freedom** is essential for a world of **peace** and **progress**.
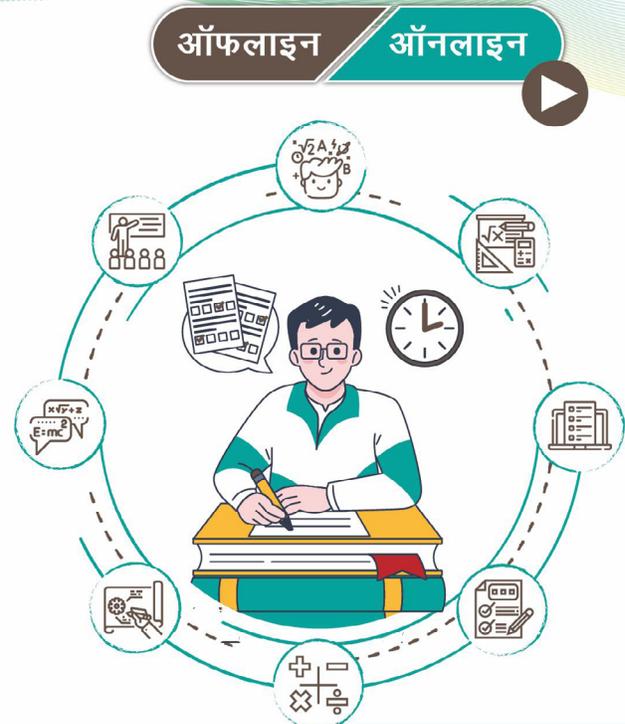
Mohandas Karamchand Gandhi (1869 -1948)

"Generations to come will scarce believe that such a one as this over in flesh and blood walked upon this earth (said of Mahatma Gandhi)."

- Albert Einstein

Gandhism began a brand-new era in the development of political philosophy. It led the world to assume that the only way to resolve even the most pressing political issues was by making personal sacrifices and convincing the adversary of his excesses and errors.

Gandhi is one of the most inspirational people of our time. He was the foremost representative of Indian nationalism in India during British control. Gandhi led India to independence through non-violent civil disobedience, which served as an inspiration for nonviolent, civil rights, and liberation movements around the globe.

He wanted to establish an ideal society in which **panchayati raj** based on real democratic principles was to flourish.

KEY FACTS...

Important works: Hind Swaraj, My Experiments with Truth

Key ideas: Ahimsa, Satyagraha, Swaraj, Sarvodaya, Ram-rajya

Sources of influence: His mother, GK Gokhle (his political guru), Socrates, John Ruskin (Book- Unto This Last), Leo Tolstoy (Book- Kingdom of God Within You)

Architectonic Ideas: Ahimsa and continuity between ends and means.

Gandhi's Views on Truth

His philosophy and practice were deeply influenced by the concept of truth, which he referred to as "Satya" in Sanskrit. Here are some key aspects of Gandhi's views on truth:

▷ **Truth as God:** For Gandhi, truth and God were intimately connected. He famously said, "God is truth." He believed that truth was not just an abstract concept but a divine force that permeated all aspects of existence. Gandhi saw the search for truth as a spiritual journey that ultimately led to the divine.

▷ **Truth as a Universal Principle:** Gandhi believed that truth is a universal principle that transcends religions, cultures, and personal beliefs. He considered truth to be eternal and unchanging.

▷ **Pursuit of Truth:** Gandhi saw the pursuit of truth as a lifelong journey and a moral obligation. He believed that individuals should continuously seek truth in their thoughts, actions, and relationships.

▷ **Truth and Non-Violence:** Gandhi saw non-violence as the natural outcome of a commitment to truth, as violence distorts and obstructs the realization of truth.

▷ **Inner Truth and Moral Integrity:** He believed that individuals should align their thoughts, words, and actions with their inner truth, which would lead to a sense of moral integrity and personal authenticity.

▷ **Truth and Social Transformation:** He believed that uncovering and exposing social injustices, inequalities, and oppressive systems was essential to the pursuit of truth. Gandhi encouraged individuals to challenge unjust social norms and work towards creating a more just and equitable society.

Gandhi's Views on Non-Violence/ Ahimsa

Ahimsa is the central concept of the Gandhian ideals. He used to say that **"Ahimsa is my creed/ religion and article of faith."** Gandhi considered non-violence to be a powerful and effective means of achieving social and political change.

▷ **Principle of Non-Violence:** Gandhi believed that non-violence is not simply the absence of physical violence but a positive force and a moral and spiritual principle that rejects the use of force in thought, word, or action. According to Gandhi, non-violence requires courage, self-discipline, and a deep commitment to truth.

▷ **Active Resistance:** Gandhi believed that non-violent actions, such as strikes, boycotts, civil disobedience, and peaceful protests, could effectively challenge unjust laws and systems and aimed at transforming the oppressor, by appealing to their conscience.

▷ **Non-Retaliation and Forgiveness:** Gandhi advocated for responding to violence and aggression with non-violence and forgiveness to promote reconciliation and peace. He rejected the idea of revenge or retaliation, seeing it as perpetuating a cycle of violence.

▷ **Personal Transformation:** Gandhi believed that non-violence is not only a means for social and political change but also

a path for personal transformation. He saw non-violence as a way to cultivate inner strength, self-control, and spiritual growth.

- **Universal Applicability:** He believed that non-violence could be practiced in all aspects of life, from personal relationships to politics and international conflicts. Gandhi envisioned a world where non-violence was the guiding principle in resolving conflicts and building a just and peaceful society.

Gandhi's philosophy of non-violence influenced numerous social and political movements around the world, inspiring leaders like Martin Luther King Jr. and Nelson Mandela. His belief in the transformative power of non-violence continues to resonate as a powerful tool for social change and conflict resolution.

Gandhi's Concern about Purity of Means Over Ends

The purity of means is linked to Gandhi's emphasis on action and not consequences. The idea is influenced by the philosophy of Geeta- **"Do your duty, reward is not your concern"** i.e. **NISHKAMA KARMA.**

In case of India's freedom struggle, Gandhi has emphasised on purity of means and non-violent nature of struggle. For instance, post eruption of violence at **Chauri-chaura,** Gandhi called off the Non-Cooperation Movement. He always believed in **hating the sin, not the sinner.**

Gandhi's hatred towards the British Raj was because they have established **satanic or Leviathan State** which is rooted in force, coercion, and violence. He has described India's battle as **Satyagraha.**

Gandhi's Critique of Western Civilisation

Gandhi in *Hind Swaraj* provides the critique of western civilisation. In Gandhi's critique of western/ modern civilisation, we also understand Gandhi's vision or Gandhi's critique of modern civilisation can be seen as part of Gandhi's **War of Position** (counter-hegemony to British position on imperialism as a civilising mission. He also called Modern Civilisation as Satanic Civilisation).

- He was influenced by **Edward Carpenter's "Civilization: Its Cause and Cure".** Gandhi found no morality or religion in western civilization.
- **Man as depraved animal:** Gandhi believes that true meaning of civilisation is which makes a man a better human being rather than a depraved animal. However, in modern civilisation, man is like an animal who is guided by appetite, not reason.
- **Materialism and Consumerism:** He believed that the pursuit of material wealth and possessions had led to a devaluation of spiritual and moral values. Gandhi emphasized the importance of simplicity and contentment, advocating for a focus on inner growth rather than material accumulation.
- **Industrialization and Modernization:** Gandhi criticises the industrial progress which had resulted in environmental degradation, exploitation of natural resources, and the marginalization of traditional livelihoods. Gandhi favoured a more sustainable and decentralized approach to development, rooted in the values and needs of local communities.
- **Centralization of Power and Individualism:** Gandhi criticized the concentration of political (even parliamentary democracy) and economic power in Western societies, which he believed led to the marginalization of the masses and the erosion of community bonds. So, he emphasises the importance of collective responsibility, community-oriented values, and Swaraj.
- **Violence and War:** Gandhi strongly criticized Western civilization's history of violence, including colonialism, imperialism, and warfare. He believed in the futility and immorality of war, advocating for nonviolent resistance and peaceful means of conflict resolution.

Thus, his aim was not to reject Western civilization entirely, but to promote a more balanced, inclusive, and morally grounded approach to human progress and societal well-being.

Gandhi's Swaraj

The idea of '**Swaraj**' or self-rule is one of the philosophical principles of Gandhian teachings, which stimulate man in conquering complete individuality and reorganization of the society. Gandhi holds that self-rule or '**Swaraj**' was nothing but **self-determination of the individual** while taking decisions. By Real Swaraj Gandhi meant the **"welfare and happiness of the masses".**

- **Political Swaraj:** Gandhi's idea of Swaraj went beyond mere political independence i.e., freedom and autonomy of India from British colonial rule. He believed that true Swaraj required active participation and empowerment of individuals in the decision-making processes that affected their lives. Gandhi emphasized the importance of decentralization and the

114

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

empowerment of local communities through concepts like **Gram Swaraj** (village self-rule).

▷ **Economic Swaraj:** Gandhi advocated for economic self-sufficiency and self-reliance to address poverty, unemployment, and inequality. He believed in the promotion of **cottage industries,** agriculture, and the use of local resources to achieve economic independence.

▷ **Moral and Spiritual Swaraj:** Gandhi's Swaraj went beyond political or economic concept; it touches moral and spiritual dimensions. He believed that Swaraj could only be achieved through self-discipline, self-transformation, and the adherence to truth and nonviolence.

▷ **Swadeshi:** Swadeshi concept of Gandhi encompassed the idea of self-sufficiency, local empowerment, and the rejection of dependence on foreign goods and systems.

▷ **Cultural Swaraj:** One should feel proud of one's own culture and heritage. He also sees it as end of the evils like untouchability and communalism.

Thus, we can see the direct influence of **Aurobindo Ghosh.** Both Gandhi and Ghosh talk about swaraj in terms of emancipation and spiritual liberation.

Gandhi's Principle of Sarvodaya

Sarvodaya, a term coined by Mahatma Gandhi, means **"the upliftment of all"** or **"the welfare of all."** It is Gandhi's translation of **John Ruskin's book- *Unto This Last*.** It was a central concept in Gandhi's philosophy and vision for a just and equitable society.

▷ **Human Dignity and Equality:** Gandhi believed in the inherent worth and dignity of every individual, regardless of their social, economic, or caste background.

▷ **Dignity of Labour:** The dignity of bread labour is that everyone should perform some sort of physical labour because only when we perform the manual labour, we will develop the respect for those who are performing manual labour.

▷ **Trusteeship:** Gandhi believed that individuals with wealth and power should act as trustees and use their resources for the welfare of all, considering themselves as custodians rather than owners. Its main aim is to solve the contradiction between capitalist and labour and concept of class struggle. Thus, it's aim is to appeal to the conscience of the capitalists. It does not recognize any right of private ownership of property except so far as it may be permitted by society for its own welfare.

▷ **Nonviolence and Harmony:** Sarvodaya was deeply rooted in the principles of nonviolence and communal harmony. Gandhi believed that true progress, social cohesion, and welfare could only be achieved through peaceful means and the resolution of conflicts through dialogue and.

While Sarvodaya was particularly relevant in the Indian context during the freedom struggle, its principles continue to inspire movements for social and economic justice worldwide.

Gandhi on Relationship Between Rights and Duties

Mahatma Gandhi had a unique perspective on the relationship between rights and duties. He believed that **rights and duties were inseparable** and that individuals should focus more on fulfilling their duties rather than demanding their rights.

▷ **Interdependence:** Gandhi emphasized that one's rights could not be divorced from their corresponding duties and responsibilities towards themselves, and society.

▷ **Duty .as the Foundation of Rights:** Gandhi saw duty as a prerequisite for the enjoyment of rights. Gandhi believed that the fulfilment of one's duties was the foundation for claiming and exercising rights.

▷ **Duty to Overcome Selfishness:** Gandhi believed that individuals have a duty to overcome selfishness and work towards the well-being of all. According to Gandhi, individuals should prioritize the welfare of others and work towards creating an inclusive and equitable society.

Inclusion of **Article 51-A** in the Indian Constitution as part of the **42nd Amendment** highlighting ten Fundamental Duties of the citizens reflects the relevance of Gandhian thoughts on relationship between rights and duties.

Gandhi's View on State

He gathered experience in South Africa that more and more power to the state meant **more and more violence or greater amount of coercion.** Gandhi wanted the state to be free from its violent elements and sought to inculcate fearlessness in the minds of people.

115

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **Mahatma Gandhi** was the architect of India's non-violent struggle for independence, blending spiritual principles with political strategy. His philosophy of **Ahimsa** and **Satyagraha** shaped India's national movement and continues to inspire global movements for justice, equality, and peace.

▷ **Mahatma Gandhi** was a pivotal figure in India's struggle for independence. He championed the principles of **truth** and **nonviolence**. His philosophy, known as **Gandhism**, emphasizes **moral integrity** and **social justice,** inspiring movements worldwide and advocating for profound societal transformation.

Interlinkages

▷ **Political Thought and Ideology:**
  ‣ Gandhi's ideas on **Swaraj, Satyagraha,** and **Ahimsa** link directly to **political philosophy.** His concepts challenge **realism** and **Machiavellian** ideas by emphasizing **ethical politics** and **the continuity of means and ends.**
  ‣ His notion of **Swaraj** aligns with ideals of **freedom** and **self-rule** in political thought, connecting to **liberalism** and **socialist ideologies.**

▷ **Political Philosophy and Marxism:**
  ‣ Gandhi's critique of **modern civilization** and his focus on **spirituality** and **non-violence** create a stark contrast with **Marxist theories.** His emphasis on **moral integrity,** as opposed to **class struggle,** connects to the philosophical debates surrounding **individual freedom, equality,** and the **role of the state** in society. This can be connected with discussions on **socialism, communalism,** and **democratic socialism.**

▷ **International Relations:**
  ‣ Gandhi's principles of **non-violence** and **Ahimsa** have a direct link to **international relations** theories of **pacifism, peaceful diplomacy,** and **conflict resolution.** His vision of a **non-violent world order** connects to **international law** and **global peace movements,** emphasizing the role of ethics and **humanitarian concerns** in foreign policy.

▷ **Environment and Gandhian Principles** (can be linked to **Environmental Movement** topic):
  ‣ Gandhi's philosophy of **simple living** and **non-materialism** advocates for **sustainable development** and **eco-friendly practices,** aligning with modern environmental policies in India focusing on **climate change** and **sustainable economic models.**

▷ **Decentralization and Local Governance**
  ‣ Gandhi's **Swaraj** concept of **local governance** influences India's **Panchayati Raj** system, emphasizing **grassroots participation** and the **empowerment of local bodies** in managing **economic** and **environmental issues** at the community level.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Nonviolence and Conflict Resolution:** Gandhi's principle of **Ahimsa** continues to inspire peaceful conflict resolution worldwide, such as in the **Apartheid** movement, showing the power of non-violence in achieving social and political change.

▷ **Ethical Leadership:** Gandhi's emphasis on moral leadership, where leaders prioritize the well-being of others and act with integrity, remains relevant today, especially in global institutions like the **United Nations,** urging ethical governance.

▷ **Sustainability and Environmentalism:** Gandhi's values of self-reliance, simplicity, and respect for nature align with modern sustainability efforts, including policies addressing **climate change** and **global warming,** promoting eco-friendly lifestyles and responsible consumption.

▷ **Community Empowerment and Self-Governance:** Gandhi's ideas of **Gram Swaraj** and decentralization influence global movements for **participatory democracy** and **grassroots development,** emphasizing the importance of local governance in shaping communities.

▷ **Social Justice and Equality:** Gandhi's focus on social justice and equality continues to drive movements that combat **discrimination** and promote **equal rights,** inspiring ongoing efforts to uplift marginalized communities.

▷ **Non-Violence (Ahimsa) and Global Peace Efforts:** Gandhi's philosophy of non-violence also influences modern **UN**

116

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

peacekeeping efforts and **India's foreign policy,** promoting peaceful coexistence through initiatives like the **Non-Alignment Movement (NAM).**

▷ **Satyagraha and Civil Disobedience:** Gandhi's Satyagraha influences contemporary social movements like **Black Lives Matter** and **climate change protests,** where peaceful resistance and civil disobedience are essential tools for social change.

▷ **Swaraj and Decentralization:** Gandhi's idea of **Swaraj** is reflected in India's **Panchayati Raj system,** promoting local governance. It also resonates with the **Atma Nirbhar Bharat** policy, which focuses on self-sufficiency and community empowerment.

▷ **Simple Living and Environmentalism:** Gandhi's philosophy of **simple living** aligns with India's policies like **NAPCC** and the **FAME scheme,** focusing on sustainable practices and promoting eco-friendly development.

▷ **Critique of Modern Civilization:** Gandhi's critique of **materialism** and consumerism influences modern policies like **Make in India,** which encourages sustainable industrial growth and supports small-scale industries that are more community-oriented.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Mahatma Gandhi's philosophy of **non-violence, truth, and self-reliance** remains an invaluable tool in addressing contemporary challenges of **injustice and inequality.** His teachings continue to inspire global movements for **social justice,** reminding us that lasting change is achieved through **peaceful resistance** and **compassionate action**

▷ Gandhi's legacy is not just a historical example but a **living philosophy** that urges us to act with **integrity and compassion.** His commitment to **human dignity** and **justice calls** for **collective action** toward a more **equitable world,** where **peace** is the ultimate goal of all societal progress.

▷ Gandhi's ideas, deeply rooted in the principles of **non-violence** and **truth,** continue to offer guidance in navigating the complexities of modern society. In an era fraught with **conflict and division,** his message of **unity, human dignity,** and **ethical politics** remains ever-relevant, challenging us to strive for a more **compassionate world.**

117

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Dr. Bhimrao Ramji Ambedkar (1891-1956)

"What are we having this liberty for? We are having this liberty in order to reform our social system, which is full of inequality, discrimination and other things, which conflict with our fundamental rights."

-DR. Babasaheb Ambedkar

Ambedkar, popularly also recognized as **Babasaheb**, was a great patriot, social-political thinker, educationist, economist, administrator, political reformer, parliamentarian, constitutionalist of high order, and a revivalist for **Buddhism** in India. He was also the chief architect of the **Indian Constitution.** Ambedkar is one of the foremost thinkers of modern India. His thought is centrally concerned with issues of **freedom, human equality, democracy,** and **socio-political emancipation.** He is a unique thinker of the world who himself suffered much **humiliation, poverty,** and **social stigma,** right from his childhood, yet he rose to great educational and philosophical heights.

KEY FACTS…

Important works: The Problem of the Rupee (1923), Annihilation of Caste (1936), What Congress and Gandhi have done to the Untouchables (1945), Who were the Sudras?

Key ideas: Social Justice, Social Democracy, State Socialism, Annihilation of Caste.

Impact: Thoughts and actions of Ambedkar have had a greater impact in areas like social transformation, Dalit empowerment, women's rights, legal reforms, etc.

Context of His Ideas

▷ He made a representation before the **Southborough Committee** that preceded the **Montague-Chelmsford Reforms of 1919** and pleaded for separate representation to the depressed classes.

▷ He started **Mooknayak**, a fortnightly in Marathi in January 1920 and played a leading role in the first **All-India Conference of Depressed Classes** (1920).

▷ He formed the **Bahishkrit Hitkarini Sabha** (Depressed Classes Welfare Association) in 1924.

▷ He led the famous **Satyagraha at Chowdar Tank** in **Mahad** demanding rights for untouchables from the common water tank, from which they were hitherto barred, eventually leading to the **burning of the Manusmriti.**

▷ He started the fortnightly journal **Bahishkrit Bharat** in Marathi and formed two organisations, **Samaj Samata Sangh** and **Samata Sainik Dal** in 1927 to reinforce the demand for equality of the depressed classes.

▷ He led the **Satyagraha at Kalaram Temple,** Nasik demanding temple entry to untouchables in 1930. In the same year, he presided over the **First All India Depressed Classes Congress,** held in **Nagpur.**

Ambedkar's Critique of Hinduism

▷ **Evolution of religion:** Ambedkar traced the religious evolution in early India i.e., **Vedic Society** which got degenerated into **Aryan society.** The rise of **Buddhism** and consequent **social** and **moral transformation**/counterrevolution manifested into development of a specific ideological and political expression which he termed **Brahmanism. Hinduism** aims to establish the dominance of **Brahmanism**.

▷ **Madness, not religion:** Hinduism is not a religion, but madness because the religion compels the poor to remain poor/ ignorant to remain poor/ignorant and it allows the people to touch **cow dung** but not fellow human beings.

▷ **Justification of religious tenets:** The **avatars** of **Hinduism**, such as **Ratna** and **Krishna**, cannot be held up for adulation as exemplaries. He saw the **Bhagavadgita** as primarily putting forward a set of arguments to save **Brahmanism** in the wake of the rise of **Buddhism**.

▷ **Doctrine of purity and pollution:** The basis of **Hinduism** is rooted in criteria of **purity** and **pollution**, which is neither logical nor scientific. It creates a system of graded inequality and hierarchy. Essential practices that reinforce the criteria of **purity** and **pollution**: **Vegetarianism** and **Endogamy**.

118

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Ambedkar on Origin of Shudras

▷ He held that **Shudras** were **Kshatriyas** who rejected the domination of **Brahmins** and therefore Brahmins had stopped the practice of **Upanayan Sanskara** (for upper castes). The term **Shudras** came from the King **Shudarak**. The successors of **Shudarak** were called as **Shudras** and considered as polluted because they developed enmity with Brahmins.

▷ Ambedkar proposed a very imaginative thesis that untouchables were broken men living on the outskirts of village communities who, due to their refusal to give up **Buddhism** and **beef-eating,** came to be condemned as untouchables.

Ambedkar on Social Justice

▷ **Ambedkar's State Theory:** Ambedkar was the first major theoretician in India who argued that consideration for the disadvantaged should be the constitutive basis of a state if the state is committed to the upholding of rights. Untouchability was only one of the great social disadvantages.

▷ Ambedkar saw **preferential measures** as resting on an inclusive conception of rights rather than merely the goodwill or benevolence of the majority. In fact, goodwill itself needs to be cultivated with an awareness of such rights.

▷ In the absence of such cultivation, goodwill and benevolence often collapse into narrow pursuit of interests masquerading themselves in the language of altruism.

Ambedkar's State Socialism

Ambedkar's **state socialism** emphasized pragmatic solutions tailored to India's socio-economic context, advocating for the **nationalization of land** and industries, **rapid industrialization,** and **collectivization of farms** to address productivity and inequality, distinct from **Marxist theory** and the Soviet model.

Critical Evaluation of Ambedkar's Thoughts

▷ **Ambedkar's Partisanship:** Ambedkar is often seen as a leader who supported the **cause of the untouchables**, the most oppressed group in society. His advocacy was based on strong, **defensible ideas** aimed at their upliftment.

▷ **Leader of the Community:** Ambedkar has been viewed by some as a **leader of the Dalit community,** not the nation. Some critics, especially right-wing intellectuals, have even labelled him as **anti-national** in his approach.

▷ **Critique of Hinduism:** Ambedkar's philosophy, known as **Ambedkarvad**, is essentially a **counter-hegemony to Brahmanism,** which he believed perpetuated inequality and social injustice. His ideas are deeply rooted in **criticism of Hinduism** and its caste system.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **B.R. Ambedkar** was a visionary leader and social reformer who rose from a marginalized background to become the architect of the **Indian Constitution.** His relentless advocacy for **social justice** and **equality** has left an indelible mark on India.

▷ As a prominent **social reformer** and jurist, **B.R. Ambedkar** dedicated his life to fighting the **caste system** and championing **Dalit rights.** His work in drafting the **Indian Constitution** was crucial in shaping an equitable and just society for all citizens.

▷ **B.R. Ambedkar's** legacy stands as a symbol of resistance against **discrimination** and **injustice**. His contributions to **human rights** and **social equality** continue to influence contemporary discussions on **democracy** and **social reform,** inspiring generations towards a more inclusive future.

Interlinkages

▷ **GANDHI AND AMBEDKAR DEBATE (AROUND VARNA SYSTEM)**

  ▸ **Gandhi** justified the concept of **Varna System** to build the mass movement or not to alienate upper caste Hindus and to show that Indian tradition was superior to that of the British.

  ▸ **Ambedkar** believed that **Varna system** is the root cause of the exploitation of **Dalits** and it has no scientific basis. Both of them uphold graded inequality and subscribe to the doctrine of birth rather than worth.

  ▸ Gandhi believed in no need for conversion of Dalits. For upliftment, he set up **Harijan Sevak Sangh.**

119

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

- ‣ Ambedkar believed that upliftment of Dalits is not possible within the fold of **Hinduism** as it is nothing but caste system.
- ‣ Ambedkar's approach was more realistic.
- ▷ **Comparison with Marx**
  - ‣ Marx advocated for **violent overthrow** of the state to establish communism, while **Ambedkarite socialism** is based on **peaceful**, **constitutional methods** to address social and economic issues.
  - ‣ **Focus on the Proletariat vs. Downtrodden Classes:** Marx's focus was on the **economic problems** of the **proletariat**, while **Ambedkar** concentrated on the social and economic issues faced by **the oppressed Dalit classes** in India.
  - ‣ **Belief Systems:** Marx was a strict **atheist**, whereas **Ambedkar** embraced **Buddhism**, seeing it as a **rational** philosophy promoting **liberty, equality, and fraternity.**
- ▷ **Justice and Equality (Rawls):** Ambedkar's concept of **social justice** aligns with **Rawls' theory of justice,** particularly his focus on **equality of opportunity** and ensuring that the **least advantaged** receive preferential treatment to eliminate **social inequalities.**
- ▷ **Indian Nationalism:** Ambedkar's focus on **social justice** and **Dalit rights** contributes to India's nationalism, emphasizing **inclusive nationalism** that transcends religious and caste divisions, ensuring equal opportunities for all.
- ▷ **Constitutionalism:** As the architect of **the Indian Constitution,** Ambedkar's ideas on **rights, representation,** and **affirmative action** shaped the **constitutional framework,** focusing on **equality, justice,** and **social welfare** for marginalized groups.
- ▷ **Social and Political Philosophy:** Ambedkar's critique of the **caste system** and advocacy for **social equality** link his ideas to **political philosophy,** promoting **democratic ideals** based on **justice** and **social reform.**
- ▷ **Social Movements:** Ambedkar's fight against **untouchability** and his role in **Dalit empowerment** directly connect to **social movements,** particularly those addressing **discrimination, marginalization,** and the **upliftment of oppressed communities.**
- ▷ **Gandhian Philosophy:** While Ambedkar disagreed with Gandhi on **caste issues,** his ideas of **social justice** and **equality** complement Gandhi's focus on **nonviolence** and the **upliftment of the downtrodden,** with a more **constitutional approach.**

Contemporary Relevance

- ▷ **Social Justice:** Ambedkar's foremost concern was **social justice** and the upliftment of marginalized sections of society, particularly the **Dalits**. His emphasis on **equal rights, access to education,** and the **elimination of social barriers** continues to inspire movements and policies aimed at achieving a more equitable society.
- ▷ **Equality and Human Rights:** He emphasized the importance of **individual liberty, fundamental rights,** and the protection of **minority communities.** His vision of a just and inclusive society guides ongoing efforts to address discrimination, empower marginalized groups, and protect the rights of all citizens.
- ▷ **Education and Empowerment:** His thoughts on **education** as a means of empowerment and social progress continue to guide initiatives aimed at improving access to **quality education** and **skill development** in India.
- ▷ **Constitutional Framework:** His ideas on **constitutionalism, federalism, rule of law, constitutional morality,** and the **separation of powers** provided the framework for India's governance system and continue to shape India's legal and political discourse.
- ▷ **Women's Rights:** His efforts to secure **equal rights** and opportunities for women, including the **right to vote** and access to education, paved the way for ongoing women's empowerment movements and the push for **gender equity** in India.

Conclusion for the Answers

- ▷ B.R. Ambedkar's relentless fight for equality and justice remains unmatched. His vision continues to inspire movements for **social reform** and **democracy,** ensuring **equal rights** for marginalized communities.
- ▷ Ambedkar was undoubtedly the tallest **Dalit leader**, having achieved remarkable victories for their rights. His **constitutional legacy** and **social reforms** paved the way for a more **inclusive India.**
- ▷ Ambedkar's ideas, from **constitutionalism** to **social justice,** continue to shape India's policies. His **influence** extends beyond his era, making him a **transformational figure** in India's ongoing struggle for **equality.**

120

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Sri Aurobindo Ghosh (1872 -1950)

> *"…Nationalism was already born and a slowly growing force. It was not born and did not grow in the Congress Pandal, nor in the Bombay Presidency Association, nor in the councils of the wise economists and learned reformers… nor under the hat and coat of the denationalised ape of English speech and manners."*
>
> *-SRI AUROBINDO*

▷ Sri Aurobindo believed **Neo-Vedanta philosophy** would increase the cultural strength of **Hinduism** and pave the way for the **growth of nationalism** in modern India. They interpreted Indian nationalism in the context of **reformation and rejuvenation of Hinduism.** He became one of the authentic exponents of **Hinduism** and **Hindu philosophy**.

▷ In the beginning of the 20th century, **nationalism became more aggressive and anti-colonial.** Sri Aurobindo Ghosh was instrumental in giving radical content to nationalism in India.

▷ Sri Aurobindo's ideas can be divided into **two phases:**

  ▸ **First Phase:** Sri Aurobindo wanted to complete the task of **Renaissance of Hinduism for the awakening of the Indian soul,** which was in deep slumber, left incomplete by **Swami Vivekananda** and **Bankimchandra Chatterjee**. Aurobindo carried forward the development of Neo-Vedanta and declared that the true message of **Vedanta** was selfless action or **Karma Yoga**. The **Geeta** taught us to **fight against injustice** because life is a series of struggles.

    ○ According to him, the goal of new Hinduism was to pave the way for the emergence of Indian nationalism and to harmonize the world and the spirit.

    ○ It could achieve its glory through the philosophy of **Vedanta**, which gave more **importance to spirituality than to science.** The West glorified science, but **science** is a light within a limited room and not the sun that illumines the world.

    ○ Aurobindo was a harsh critic of the **British Rule in India.** He did not agree with the opinion of the moderates that it was a **divine dispensation.**

    ○ **British rule was a curse** because the foreign rule in India exhausted moral and mental energies of the Indian people. The British rule **ruined the economy of India,** and it was the worst type of **bureaucratic despotism** motivated by plunder and domination.

    ○ The British claim of a good government was false and a **good and efficient government was no substitute for self-government and freedom.**

    ○ Aurobindo contended that the spirit of India could be freed only by securing complete independence.

    ○ He expounded the concept of **Indian nationalism** and developed the theory of **passive resistance.**

  ▸ **Second Phase:** As a **great** sage of India, he wrote extensively on the **ideal of human unity** and the essential characteristics **of the Indian model of state building.**

KEY FACTS…

Important works: His writings in journals like Bande Mataram and Indu-Prakash, Life Divine, Essays on Geeta, The Synthesis of Yoga, etc.

Architectonic Ideas: Concepts of Nation, Nationalism (spiritual and cultural), Swaraj, Program of political action and Passive Resistance.

Sources of influence: Geeta, Upanishads, Neo-Vedantism of Vivekananda, Bankimchandra Chatterjee (Goddess Shakti), Goethe, Herder, and Hegel.

He was a militant nationalist eager to liberate his motherland from bondage.

He sought to give message to the world in the ideals of the human unity and nationalism to achieve the goal.

Sri Aurobindo's Critique of Political Moderates in India

▷ When Sri Aurobindo entered Indian politics, it was dominated by the moderate leaders who were of the view that **British rule in India was a divine dispensation.**

▷ Aurobindo was highly critical of their approach to politics. The Congress confused sufferance with freedom and favour of foreign despotism with the right of citizenship.

▷ He wrote a series of articles in the *'Indu Prakash'* of Pune under the **title *'New Lamps for Old'*** and severely criticized the **politics of petitions and prayers of the moderate leaders.**

▷ He believed Congress leaders had **narrow and limited ideals.** The Congress was selfishly frigid of social development and awakening of the masses and organically infirm. It was **unaware of deeper facts;** therefore, it did not articulate the popular opinion of the entire Indian people.

▷ It **lacked the spirit of sincerity, wholeheartedness, right type of methods, and right type of leaders** because when the blind led the blind both were bound to fall in a ditch.

▷ Aurobindo argued that during **Ram Mohan Roy's period,** politics of prayers and petition was the only possible policy, but it was wrong to continue it even in the later years. He pleaded for the adoption of new and strong methods.

▷ He called for a complete change in the policy of the Congress party. He pleaded for the adoption of new policies and programmes to replace the politics of supplication carried out by the moderates.

▷ He suggested four methods as part of his **program of political action: Swaraj** (Self-government), **Swadeshi** (local goods), **National Education**, and **Boycott** (foreign goods).

Sri Aurobindo's Theory of Nationalism

▷ **Context:** There was a debate going with respect to the identity of India as a nation. British position was that India is merely a geographical expression. Indian Moderates held that India is a nation in making. He had a great influence of **Vedanta Philosophy** (unity and oneness in man and God) and the idea of **Mother India** or **Shakti** of **Bankimchandra**.

"Nation is natural. Nation has spirit and nation never dies. Nation exists for divinity." **-Hegel**

▷ **Spiritual Basis of Nationalism:** Aurobindo believed that the **aim of nationalism** should not be limited to political, economic, or social goals alone, but should also **encompass the spiritual and cultural upliftment of the nation.** He was influenced by ideas of **Herder, Hegel,** and German tradition of cultural nationalism.

▷ **Ideal of Swaraj:** By the term Swaraj, he meant complete independence. However, his concept of freedom went **beyond political independence** and emphasized a broader and deeper understanding of **human liberation.**

▷ A large part of his theory of nationalism was based on **awakening the dormant spirit of nationalism** that was latent in the soul of India. The struggle against the foreign rule would enable it to achieve **self-realisation.**

▷ In the words of Aurobindo, *"craving for freedom is lodged so deep in human heart that even thousands of arguments are powerless to disapprove it."*

▷ **Synthesis of East and West:** He believed that cultural nationalism should assimilate and integrate the best elements from various traditions to create a vibrant and inclusive national culture. He was a critique of **British Utilitarian tradition** and an admirer of **Idealist tradition** represented by the German scholars (**Hegel** and **Herder**). **Romain Rolland** said, Sri Aurobindo was *"the highest synthesis of the genius of Asia and the genius of Europe."*

▷ **Harmonizing Universal and National Aspirations:** He believed that **nationalism should not be narrow-minded or exclusive** but should work towards the larger aim of **human solidarity** and **global well-being.** Thus, we can see the cosmopolitan approach expressed in Indian traditions (**Vasudhaiva Kutumbakam i.e., the world is one family**). This view was influenced by the **Sanatana Dharma** and **Natural Law of Aggregation.**

▷ **Essential elements:** Essential elements were **geographical unity, common past,** common interest impelling towards unity, and certain favourable political conditions which would strengthen **Indian Nationality** to offer united resistance to foreign rule.

▷ **Importance of villages:** He believed that the ideal of national Swaraj must be modelled on the old **village community,** which was democratic, self-sufficient, autonomous, and self-governing.

▷ **Inclusive character:** The ideal of **Indian nationalism** was largely **Hindu** in character but he pointed out that this nationalism was wide enough to include the **Muslim culture** and traditions. He said that the Hindu should win Swaraj for himself as well as for the Muslim.

"Nationalism survives in the strength of God, and it is not possible to crush it, whatever weapons are brought against it. Nationalism is immortal because it is not human being."

"Nationalism is not mere a political program, nationalism is a religion." **-Sri Aurobindo**

Sri Aurobindo on Education

▷ In 1907, Sri Aurobindo wrote an essay titled '**A System of National Education**'. In this, he explained the concept of his education and said, *"In every human being there is some God-given divine power, something that is his own, which can be moved towards perfection. The task of education is to identify, develop and use it. The main goal of education should be to fully develop the inherent power of the developing soul and prepare it for the best work."*

122

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Introduction for the Answers

▷ Aurobindo Ghose was a visionary thinker and freedom fighter, was a profound intellectual who combined **nationalism** with a quest for **human progress.** His ideas on **politics, society,** and **individual transformation** offer enduring insights into building a **just** and **harmonious world.**

▷ Sri Aurobindo Ghose was called by **Romain Rolland** as *"the highest synthesis of the genius of Asia and the genius of Europe."* A visionary thinker, Aurobindo combined **spirituality** and **nationalism**, offering a transformative approach to **India's independence and human progress.**

Interlinkages

▷ **Indian Nationalism** Aurobindo's ideas on **Nationalism** and **Swaraj** connect directly to the discussions on **Indian Nationalism** in political thought. His vision of **spiritual nationalism** and his critique of Western materialism provide a framework for understanding the cultural and spiritual dimensions of Indian nationalism. He emphasized that **Swaraj** is not just about political independence but also about cultural and spiritual awakening, challenging colonial domination.

▷ **Comparative Politics** Aurobindo's **critique of British colonialism** connects to broader discussions on the **colonial state** and the **legitimacy of colonial rule** in comparative politics. His rejection of British claims of bringing good governance and his insistence on complete **independence** ties into the global discourse on the nature of colonial states and their impact on colonized societies.

▷ **International Relations:** Aurobindo's concept of **human unity** and the spiritual vision of a **unified world** connect with **globalism** and theories of **international cooperation.** His emphasis on spiritual solidarity and the global interconnection of humanity aligns with discussions in international relations on the importance of **human solidarity** and the pursuit of global peace.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Spiritual Evolution:** Sri Aurobindo's teachings provide guidance on personal transformation, self-realization, and the pursuit of inner growth, which remain relevant for individuals seeking spiritual and personal development.

▷ **Integral Education:** Sri Aurobindo's vision of integral education emphasizes the **holistic development of individuals,** including their physical, mental, emotional, and spiritual dimensions.

▷ **Social Transformation:** Sri Aurobindo's vision of social transformation emphasizes the need for **ethical leadership, social justice,** and the harmonious development of communities.

▷ **Environmental Consciousness:** Sri Aurobindo's emphasis on living in harmony with nature and his vision of sustainable development are relevant in the context of environmental challenges.

▷ **Integral Politics:** Sri Aurobindo's concept of **integral politics,** which emphasizes the integration of spiritual values into governance, holds relevance in exploring **alternative models of politics and leadership** that prioritize the well-being of individuals and the collective.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ **Rabindranath Tagore described Aurobindo as a source of new light for India.** Aurobindo's **spiritual and philosophical outlook** not only shaped India's freedom struggle but also paved the way for a **progressive and awakened nation.**

▷ **Aurobindo's nationalism** went beyond politics to include **spiritual awakening.** He believed that national growth is tied to **inner transformation,** and his ideas continue to inspire people to seek **collective responsibility** and **personal upliftment.**

▷ **Aurobindo's ideas on spiritual unity, self-reliance,** and integrating **Eastern and Western thought** are still relevant. In today's fragmented world, his teachings offer a way to build stronger connections and promote **harmony across cultures.**

123

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

UNIT 10: WESTERN POLITICAL THOUGHT

"The only true wisdom is in knowing you know nothing." **-SOCRATES (469-399 BCE)**

SOCRATES

Introduction

Socrates was considered as Wisest Man on Earth because he accepted that "he knew nothing" or "he is ignorant". He is also called **THE FATHER OF ETHICS** AND **FATHER OF PHILOSOPHY.**

Contribution of Socrates
▷ He invented the methodology of **DIALECTICS**.
▷ The biggest contribution is **Theory of Knowledge**.

Important Quotes by Socrates

▷ Knowledge is Virtue.
▷ Unexamined life is not worth living for a human being.

In 399 BCE the Athenian democracy charged the philosopher Socrates with impiety and corrupting the youth of Athens. When he was asked to choose between escaping the state and drinking Hemlock (poison), he preferred to drink poison rather than escaping.

Why did Socrates choose Hemlock over Escaping the State?

Because Socrates wanted to show that "life carries no meaning if we cannot live according to the ideas we subscribe to". He wanted to give message that it is the duty of all citizens to obey the orders of the state even when it appears against our interests. The state's action may appear against our interest because we may be ignorant.

Beginning of Philosophy

Before Socrates, scholars were trying to understand the physical properties of the Universe. Some believed that everything in the Universe is made up of water or fire.

It was Socrates who believed that it is not enough to know what constitutes life, but it is more important to understand what constitutes "Good Life".

"Knowledge is Virtue"

The above statement of Socrates forms the base of Socratic thought. According to him, the objective of life is to lead a Good Life. And to lead a good life, we should have the knowledge of a good life.

What is the Source of Knowledge?

According to Socrates, the true source of ultimate knowledge is within us. Our soul is the ultimate guide. Our soul can guide us to avoid the dilemma between what to do and what not to do.

How to Listen to the Voice of Soul?

Socrates proposed the methodology of **DIALECTICS** to listen to the voice of soul. Dialectics can be called a method of **logical reasoning.** It involves engaging people in the debates to understand the limitations of one's arguments and to correct oneself in a logical manner.

Categorization of knowledge into two types:

1. **Illusion of knowledge or Ignorance:** Socrates calls it opinions or beliefs, not knowledge. It is shaky.
2. **Conceptual knowledge:** It is unshakable as it is a product of Dialectics. Through dialectics, our opinions or beliefs are transformed into true knowledge.

Hence, Socrates suggests- *An unexamined life is not worth living.* By this Socrates means that it is important to critically examine our beliefs, so that we are able to lead a good life in real sense. Thus, he equates true knowledge with virtue and believes that knowledge is a precondition for good life.

Contemporary Relevance

Inhuman practices: The idea is relevant in the Indian context where many **outdated and inhuman customs and traditions** are still prevalent (for instance- superstitions, animal sacrifice, gender discrimination, etc.). When these customs are subjected to critical examination and reject them on a logical and rational basis, we can move on the path of social progress.

Relevance of Dialectics: The **foundation of Parliamentary Democracy** is based on debates and discussions. However, today the parliaments have become houses of disruption and legislations are passed without debates. Thus, Socratic methodology of Dialectics has great relevance for the democracies and governance.

IMPORTANCE OF SOCRATIC IDEAS

The Socratic theory of knowledge provided the foundation for Plato's political philosophy and justification for the Rule of Philosopher King.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ Socrates, often called **the father of philosophy and ethics,** believed that **true knowledge** comes from within and that a **life unexamined is not worth living.** His method of dialectics continues to shape modern philosophy and democracy.

Interlinkages

▷ Socrates' focus on **critical examination of beliefs** and **knowledge as virtue** can be connected to the **nature of political power** in democratic systems, particularly the **importance of informed citizens** in ensuring a vibrant democracy. Socratic dialectics can strengthen **public discourse** in political debates and policy making, ensuring that decisions are based on logical reasoning and not on unchecked opinions or beliefs.

▷ Socrates' theory of **knowledge and virtue** also aligns with the modern **concept of ethical governance.** His idea that leaders should have **knowledge of the good life** resonates with the **role of ethics in public administration.** Socratic principles can guide policymakers in ensuring that their decisions promote **public welfare** and reflect **moral responsibility,** particularly in the **context of governance and ethics** in contemporary India.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ Socrates' emphasis on **critical examination of beliefs** and **knowledge as virtue** resonates with **India's ongoing debates on social reforms** like **gender equality** and **caste discrimination.** Socratic methods can help challenge outdated practices, encouraging **rational discussions** and **logical examination** to address issues like **untouchability** or **child marriage** that persist despite legal reforms. Such **critical reflection** is key to **transforming societal norms** towards greater **social justice** and **progress**.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Socrates' emphasis on **self-examination and knowledge** as the path to a **good life** remains relevant today, urging us to question outdated beliefs and embrace rational discussions for societal progress and governance.

PLATO: JUSTICE AND REASON

> *"The Book (Republic) may be regarded not only as a philosophical work, but as a treatise on social and political reform. It is written in the spirit of a man not merely reflecting on human life but intensely anxious to reform and revolutionise it."*
> *- Nettleship*

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

⊙ **Critically examine Plato's theory of Forms. (2024)**
⊙ **Explain Aristotle's critique of Plato's Idealism. (2019)**
⊙ **Plato was an enemy of open society. Comment. (2015)**
⊙ **Comment on: Western thought, one might say, has been either platonic or anti-platonic but hardly ever non-platonic (Popper). (2009)**
⊙ **Comment on: State is individual writ large. (2006)**
⊙ **Comment on: Until philosophers are kings. Or kings and princes of this world have the spirit and power of philosophy, cities will never have rest from evil. (Plato) (2000)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions focus on Plato's theory of Forms, critiquing its idealism and its separation of the world of Forms from the material world. Aristotle's critique challenges Plato's notion of ideal, abstract forms, arguing for a more empirical approach to understanding reality. Plato's views on the role of philosophers in politics, exemplified in his statement about philosophers being kings, are examined, along with Popper's critique of Plato's influence on Western thought. The recurring theme of the state as individual writ large emphasizes the connection between the individual's role in society and broader political structures.

About Plato

▷ Plato (428/427 - 348/347 BCE), a Greek philosopher, is one of the most creative influential thinkers in political philosophy.
▷ He is known as the **Father of Political Philosophy** and **Founder of Philosophical Idealism.** He believed that there is a universal idea in the world of eternal reality beyond the world of the senses.
▷ In the entire history of political thought, no thinker evoked the admiration, reverence, and criticism that Plato did.
▷ **Major Works:** The Republic, The Statesman, The laws.

Introduction

▷ He was the first to formulate and define political ideas within a larger framework of a philosophical idea of Good. He was concerned about **human life and human soul or human nature.** He has been praised for his **denunciation of materialism and brutish selfishness.**

▷ Both **Voltaire** and **Nietzsche** characterized Platonism as the intellectual side of Christianity. **John Ruskin** and **William Morris** were attracted by Plato's concern for human perfection and excellence.

KEY FACTS...

Major Works: The Republic, The Statesman, The Laws
Key Ideas: Theory of Philosopher-King, Theory of Ideas, Theory of Justice, Theory of Education, Communism of Property and Family.
Major Critics: Friedrich Nietzsche, Karl Popper, Aristotle

126

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Life and Times of Plato

▷ Plato, an aristocrat by both birth and temperament. Plato met Socrates in 407 BC at the age of 20 and since then was under his hypnotic spell.

▷ As a young man, Plato had political ambitions, but he became a disciple of Socrates, accepting his basic philosophy and dialectics i.e., the pursuit of truth through discussions and dialogues.

▷ The trial and execution of Socrates in 399 BC proved to be a turning point in Plato's life.

In 388 BC, Plato, after his return to Athens, founded the Academy, the institution often described as the first European University.

Quick Points to Remember

Major Contributions of Plato

1. Plato as father of political philosophy

He was the first person to describe what constitutes an ideal **state and good political life, what is the idea behind the state and what are the ethics for the political class.**

2. Theory of Philosopher King

According to him that state is ideal where philosophers are rulers. In words of Plato, *"Until philosophers are the rulers or rulers learn the philosophy, there is no end to the predicament of huma life".*

3. Political Idealism (Context- Defeat of Athens from the hands of Sparta)

- Ideal is real.
- Whole is prior to part (State is superior t0 individual).
- No concept of rights, only duties.
- No separation between ethics and politics.

4. Influence of Socrates on Plato: Methodology

- "All that is Platonic is Socratic".
- Plato's methodology- **Dialectics** (all is written in the form of dialogues where Socrates is the main character).

5. Influences on Plato

- **Pythagoras:** The entire universe is based on mathematical principles.
- **Heraclitus:** Change is the characteristic of the world.
- **Parmenides:** Along with change, permanence is also the characteristic of the world.

Plato's Theory of Idea: Reality is Shadow of Ideas

▷ **Theory of Idea:** The statement comes from Plato's **"theory of ideas"** where he explains the nature of reality. He believes that idea is ultimate reality.

▷ **Context of the theory of idea:** poor state of Athens because of the ignorant ruling class.

▷ **Basis of theory of idea:** Socrates' theory of knowledge (real knowledge is conceptual and can't be challenges.

▷ **Matter vs Idea:** Plato believed that idea is real, and matter is rhetoric. And Plato proved it by using methodology of Dialectics (matter is antithesis and idea is synthesis). Idea is perfect manifestation and belongs to the world of permanence (world of God).

▷ **Allegory of Cave:** Deep within the cave, the vision is restricted, and people could see only shadows which they believe them as reality. Once people escape from the cave, they come out of illusion and see the real world.

Thus, Plato wants to teach the ruling class true meaning of reality and true happiness.

127

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Theory of Justice

The concept of justice is the most important principle of Plato's political philosophy. The sub-title of the Republic, 'Concerning Justice' shows the extraordinary importance which Plato attached to justice.

The **sub-title of the Republic- "Concerning Justice"** shows the extraordinary importance which Plato attached to justice.

John Rawls: *"Justice is the first virtue of the social system, just like truth is the first virtue of any system of thought"*. Thus, justice is considered as a precondition for harmonious co-existence.

Four cardinal virtues of ideal state: Wisdom, Courage, Temperance, and Justice

Three principles as foundation of Justice:

▷ **Functional specialisation**- as per capacity and merit (Departmental excellence).

▷ **Non-interference in other's duties**- prerequisite for unity and welfare.

▷ **Harmony and interdependence**- between three classes representing **wisdom (Men of Gold), courage (Men of Silver),** and **appetite (Men of Copper).**

According to Plato, **justice does not consist in mere adherence to the laws,** for it is based on the inner nature of human spirit, it is also to the triumph of the stronger over the weaker, for it protects the weaker against the stronger.

Similarity can be found between Concept of Justice and **Indian concept of Dharma.** It can also be related with Indian system of functional differentiation i.e. **Varna system.**

> *Prof. Ernest Barker-* *"Justice for Plato is at once a part of human virtue and the bond which joins men together in the states. It makes man good and make him social".*
> *Prof. Sabine-* *"Justice is a bond which holds the society together".*

State is Individual Writ Large

In literal sense, it means state is a bigger version of the individual. By this statement, Plato means that the nature of state depends on the character of individual. In nutshell, justice found at the level of the state and individual do not differ from each other.

Nettleship: *"Education in REPUBLIC offered a formula for dividing work and achieving harmonious cooperation".*

Klosko: *"Platonic education is primarily a moulding of souls".* Plato looked to education as an instrument of moral reform, for it would mould and transform human souls.

▷ **Plato's purpose**- to create an ideal state on the foundations of perfect idea of justice or god's idea of justice.

▷ **Just soul**- is the one in which reason/ wisdom dominates over courage and appetite. And such souls are in perfect peace and harmony with each others.

▷ **Just state**- similar to the concept of just soul, just state is the one which is governed by the wisest man or philosopher ruler. And all other persons perform their duties according to the spiritual qualities of soul.

Criticism of Plato's Theory of Justice

▷ The concept is grounded in morality but lacks legal sanction.

▷ Theory might be applicable in a city state but can't be enforced in modern state or society. The theory **restricts social mobility** (ex- a capable **slave** can't move up the ladder of social structure).

▷ He creates this notion of one quality being dominant, which is like the Varna **System** in India.

▷ Plato's concept of justice gives **absolute power to one class-** the philosophers, which might lead to autocracy or tyranny of few.

Nietzsche: he criticised Plato for founding a JUST and RIGHTLY ORDERED SOCIETY with the help of a LIE (myth of metals).

Popper: The abuses of the myth far outweighed its uses (Rigid class divisions, anti-humanitarianism and anti-individualism).

128

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Theory of Education

Purpose: The theory of Education is linked to the theory of Justice. In just state, every individual has to perform the tasks as per his natural aptitude or spiritual qualities of soul. And in his system of education, there is process of filtration.

Plato observed the education system of Sparta and Athens, and he was inspired by the Spartan education system.

Scheme of Education

Athens	Sparta
▷ Privatised system of education and only rich could afford the education.	▷ Education was the responsibility of the state. Education was universal and state sponsored.
▷ Only men were allowed to get education and women were deprived.	▷ There was no discrimination against women.
▷ Neglect of military education.	▷ Military education was mandatory for all.
▷ No control of state over education.	▷ Education was strictly regulated by the state.

Plato's Scheme of Education: Physical, Mental and Spiritual Training

Athens	Sparta
First stage: Primary education (0-6 years)	▷ Gymnastics for physical development ▷ Music for mental development ▷ Moral stories for character building
Second stage: Secondary education (6-20 years)	All general subjects and military education
First Filtration Test (At 20 years of age): Whoever pass the test, will be promoted for further education. Rest will join the producer class.	
First stage: Higher Education (21-30 years)	Mathematics, Geometry, Literature
Second Filtration: Those who show aptitude for further learning will be promoted. Rest will join the soldier class.	
Second stage: Higher education (30-35 years)	Dialectics will be taught.
Third stage: Higher education (36-50 years)	15 years of practical training.
At the age of 50, the person will become eligible for becoming the ruler. According to Plato, who has no lust for power and who is reluctant to govern, will become philosopher ruler/ king. **"Those states are best governed where rulers are reluctant to govern".**	

Criticism of Plato's Theory of Education

▷ Plato's Scheme of education was undemocratically devised in so far as it ignored the producing class completely.

▷ The Platonic scheme of education will create an ideal philosopher more than an ideal man of action. Plato does not sufficiently realize that education should be relative to the character of the individual.

▷ Plato's diagnosis is correct, but prescription is wrong. He ignores the basic Human Psychology.

▷ It is true that those who have lust for power, may be also become corrupt. But at the same time, a person can't perform any task for longer period unless he has interest in the same.

So, we can think of some other legal or institutional accountability measures to deal with corruption of ruling class

129

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Plato's Theory of Communism

If Education is primary machinery to create an ideal state, communism is the supplementary machinery. Because the ruling class is the men of reason, and they know what constitutes Good Life.

Plato suggests communism as an additional safeguard, because sometimes in particular situation, appetite may dominate the reason. The purpose is to weed out corruption.

Features of Plato's Communism

▷ **Meant only for Guardian Class (Ruling and Soldiers/ auxiliaries):** chances for going corrupt exist.
▷ **Communism of property:** Guardian class won't be allowed to own property.
▷ **Communism of family:** family relations will result into corruption as well as nepotism. State will regulate the institution of marriage (Eugenic purpose- to create best race). And children will be in the custody of the state (to check nepotism and liberate women from domestic chores and allowing them to contribute to state).

Criticism of Plato's Communism

CRITICISM OF COMMUNISM OF PROPERTY

▷ **Motivation:** Property acts as a source of motivation and gives sense of achievement. It also acts as a source of charity.
▷ **Propertied class:** Those who own property are men of reason and prefer stability.

Hence, Aristotle suggests that it would be inappropriate to deprive ourselves from the virtues of property.

CRITICISM OF COMMUNISM OF FAMILY

▷ **Regressive:** Aristotle strongly criticises Plato's prescription as it takes society back to barbaric ages.
▷ **Emotional stability:** It is evident that the institution of family is a source of emotional stability.
▷ **Grube and Taylor:** They call Plato's prescriptions as **abhorrent Principles** as they don't take into account the deepest human associations and emotions.

Plato's communism	Modern communism
Plato as idealist: Wants to create ideal state	Marx as materialist: Wants to end the state
Plato expects citizens to sacrifice their interests for the sake of state.	Marx calls for revolution against the state.
Plato's basis of communism is material temptation and its nature is individualist.	Marx' basis is the growth of social evils, which result from the accumulation of private property.
Plato divides the population into three classes.	Marx wants to abolish the classes.
Plato considers idea as ultimate reality.	For Marx, idea is false consciousness.
Second stage: Higher education (30-35 years)	Dialectics will be taught.
Plato does not support violence.	Marx supports violent overthrow of state.
Thus, similarities are superficial, and differences are fundamental.	

Theory of Philosopher King

The concept of the philosopher king was first proposed by Plato in his dialogue, **the Republic.** It refers to a theoretical ruler who combines philosophical knowledge and temperament with political skill and power.

▷ **Linchpin of ideal state:** Philosopher king is a symbol of knowledge and sacrifice. The theory of philosopher king was the linchpin of Plato's ideal state. It was derived from the conviction that philosopher had the knowledge, intellect, and training to govern them.

▷ **Absolute authority:** He will have absolute powers, with no limitations of public opinion or law. But he can't change the constitution of the Republic.

Critical Evaluation of Theory of Philosopher King

▷ **Meant only for Guardian Class (Ruling and Soldiers/ auxiliaries):** chances for going corrupt exist.

▷ **Communism of property:** Guardian class won't be allowed to own property.

▷ **Communism of family:** family relations will result into corruption as well as nepotism. State will regulate the institution of marriage (Eugenic purpose- to create best race). And children will be in the custody of the state (to check nepotism and liberate women from domestic chores and allowing them to contribute to state).

Assessment of Plato

Plato as first Fascist or Totalitarianism	Scholars like **Isaiah Berlin and Karl Popper** have called Plato as Father of Totalitarianism because he mainly talks about duties and neglected the liberty or individual freedom. Plato also advocated unquestionable obedience to the Philosopher Ruler. **Karl Popper-** Plato attempted to end the dialectics and democratic traditions in Greece. If we don't regard Plato as first fascist, it is because of SPELL OF PLATO. However, **Levenson** defends Plato's writings and acknowledge the difference in times and writings of Plato.
Plato as enemy of Open Society (Popper)	**Popper's Book (*The Open Society and It's Enemies*):** Calls Plato, Hegel and Marx as enemies of open society. **Three arguments:** **Essentialism** (supreme knowledge), **Holism** (sacrifices individualism for collectivity) and **Historicism** (ideological use of history). Thus, these thinkers rely on myths and present myths as ultimate reality.
Plato as Father of Political Philosophy	Plato is the Father of Political Philosophy Plato is philosophy and philosophy is Plato. The entire western philosophy is nothing but the footnotes to Plato and Aristotle. "One might say, has been either platonic or anti platonic but hardly ever non-platonic". (Popper)
Plato divides the population into three classes.	Despite coming from highly patriarchal society, Plato try to remove the disabilities faced by the women in Greece. He advocates for women's access to education and participation in governance. He makes no gender distinction as to who should be trained as rulers ("guardians") of the state. His scheme of communism takes custody of children which has liberating influence on women. **Criticism-** It is argued that the purpose of Plato was to use the talent of women for the service of state. **Julia Annas** argues that the Plato's argument in the Republic fails to make adequate case for gender equality According to liberal feminist theorist **Susan M. Okin,** Plato was in some sense a feminist, but an inadequate one.

Aristotle is not only the Greatest Disciple of Plato, but Greatest Critique of Plato.

Plato	Aristotle
Father of political Philosophy.	Father of Political Science.
Perfectionist- wants to create ideal state.	Moderate/ Principle of golden mean- wants to establish best practicable state.
Radical/ extreme solutions- abolition of family and property.	Conservative approach- relies on collective wisdom of ages and wants to preserve traditions and customs.

Conclusion

Plato is philosophy and philosophy is Plato for out of Plato comes all things that are still written and debated among the men of thought. (Ralph Waldo Emerson)

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **Plato**, one of the most influential thinkers in **political philosophy,** pioneered the concept of an ideal state, advocating for a **philosopher-king** and the integration of **justice, education,** and **reason** as the foundation of governance.

▷ Through works like **The Republic, Plato** articulated a vision of an ideal state, emphasizing **justice** as harmony, the role of **philosophers as rulers,** and the necessity of **philosophical education** for societal well-being.

Interlinkages

▷ **Plato and Marxism:**
  ‣ Plato's Theory of Justice shares parallels with Marxist ideals of societal harmony, where justice involves the fair distribution of resources. However, Plato's rigid class system contrasts with Marx's call for class abolition.

▷ **Plato and Indian Political Thought:**
  ‣ Plato's idea of the philosopher-king finds resonance in Kautilya's Arthashastra, where rulers are expected to govern wisely for the welfare of the people, highlighting the role of good governance in both traditions.

▷ **Plato and Contemporary International Relations:**
  ‣ Plato's ideal state governed by wise rulers can be linked to the concept of ethical governance in international relations, emphasizing the role of moral leadership and justice in global politics, as seen in contemporary diplomatic practices.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Plato's Theory of Justice in Contemporary Governance:**
  ‣ Plato's **concept of justice** aligns with modern debates on **social justice**, where governance is seen as ensuring fairness and equality. His ideas inspire contemporary **policy-making** aimed at creating balanced societies and addressing systemic inequalities.

▷ **Philosopher King in Modern Politics:**
  ‣ Plato's **philosopher-king** theory has relevance in today's **political leadership** discourse, where calls for **qualified leadership** and **expertise in governance** are central. It supports the growing demand for leaders with wisdom and ethical integrity in politics.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ Plato's idea of a **just state,** governed by a **philosopher-king,** remains a cornerstone of **political theory,** influencing both **utopian ideals** and critiques of **totalitarian regimes** in contemporary politics.

▷ Despite criticism for its **elitism** and **authoritarian tendencies,** Plato's political philosophy continues to inspire discussions on **justice, education**, and **ideal governance,** making his contributions deeply relevant even today.

SANDHAN with **A.I.T.S**
A VisionIAS Personalised Test Series — ALL INDIA GS PRELIMS TEST SERIES 2025

"Personalise Your UPSC Prelims Preparation"

| 2026 | ENGLISH MEDIUM 29 JUNE | हिन्दी माध्यम 29 जून |

HINDI & ENGLISH MEDIUM

Access **25000+** questions

Choose your **subject** and topic

Create your test from **VisionIAS** or UPSC PYQs

Performance and Progress Analysis

133

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

ARISTOTLE: MORAL ACTION AND THE BEST CONSTITUTION

"Earlier philosophers had tried to explain the universe, but Aristotle was first to realise that such an explanation should be preceded by an inventory and description." -Sarton
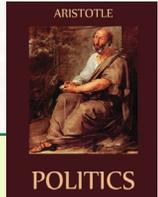
Previous year Questions (PYQs)

- ⊕ **Explain the Aristotelean view of politics. To what extent do you think it has contributed to the development of modern-day constitutional democracies? (2022)**
- ⊕ **Everywhere, inequality is a cause of revolution. Aristotle (2017)**
- ⊕ **Central to Aristotle's political thought is his classification of the different types of political constitutions in the Politics. Evaluate. (2014)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: "The State is a creation of nature and man is by nature a political animal." (2011)**
- ⊕ **Attempt a critique a Aristotle's ideas on slavery. (2006)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: The authority of the master and that of the statements are different from one another (Aristotle). (2004)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions delve into **Aristotle's political thought,** particularly his view of the **state as a natural creation** and **man as a political animal.** His **classification of political constitutions** in Politics and the impact of **inequality** as a revolutionary force are central to understanding his views on governance. Aristotle's concept of **slavery** and the **master-slave relationship** are critically examined for their limitations in contemporary discussions on justice and equality. His contributions to **modern constitutional democracies** are evident in the foundations of **political classification** and **mixed government.**

Introduction: Aristotle as a Thinker

- ▷ **Aristotle** was one of the prominent political thinkers of Greek ancient time, he was the student of Plato and considered as the gem of political thought. He is considered as greatest disciple of Plato as well as the greatest critique of Plato. Actually, his focus was more on addressing the defects in the thoughts of his master.
- ▷ **Prof. Bowels:** "Of all the books on the subject, politics is the most influential and most profound. It is the book which must be mastered before others".

"The Politics of Aristotle is the richest treasure that has come down to us from antiquity, it is the greatest contribution to the field of political science that we possess". - Zeller.

KEY FACTS...

Methodology: Scientific, Historical, Comparative, Inductive, and Observational.

Major Works: Metaphysics, Politics, Organon (a collection of his logical treatises)

Known for: The Politics (theoretical treatise on political science).

Key ideas: Theories of state, citizenship, property, slavery, constitutions, law, and revolution.

Impact: Aristotle has been regarded as Father of Political Science as he was the first to analyse, critically and systematically, the then existing constitutions and classify them. He is also known as originator of Comparative Politics.

Life and Times of Aristotle

- ▷ In the first place Aristotle was significantly influenced by his father, his biological outlook and scientific method to the problem. The dominant anarchy in Athens also greatly influenced the thought of Aristotle.
- ▷ He persuaded that anarchy, lawlessness and an unsettled state of affairs was due to the fact that rulers were dreamers rather than realists.

His practical knowledge greatly influenced his thinking and philosophy. And his master, Plato, also had great influence on Aristotle.

Aristotle's Theory of Stat

▷ **Needs Of Man:** Aristotle believes that man is, by nature and necessity, a social animal and he *who is unable to live in society must be either a god or beast.* He finds the origin of the state in the innate desire of an individual **to satisfy his economic needs and racial instincts.**

▷ **Logical Argument:** For the realisation of this desire the **male and female** on the one hand and the **master and slave** on the other, come together, live together, and form a **family**, i.e., a household which has its moral and social use.

▷ **Teleology:** It is in the household that the three elements originate and develop which are essential to the building of a state, namely **fellowship, political organisation, and justice.**

▷ **The State Is A Community:** Aristotle delineates the evolution of social institutions from the family through the village to the city state; in the historical sense, the state is the natural and final stage in the growth of human relations.

▷ **State As Highest of All Communities:** Aristotle maintains that the state is not only a community, but it is the highest community aiming at the highest good.

> **Aristotle:**
> ▷ "State comes into existence for the sake of good life and continues for the sake of good life."
> ▷ "The state is by nature clearly prior to the family and the individual, since the whole is of necessity prior to the part".
> **Prof. William Ebenstein:** "Aristotle's state is a conception of moral sovereignty rather than of legal sovereignty".

Critical Evaluation

Whether state is natural or necessary remains a matter of debate.

▷ **Idealists:** State is necessary and a source of virtue.

▷ **Liberals:** State is necessary evil.

▷ **Anarchists:** State is an unnecessary evil.

Aristotle's Theory of Citizenship

▷ **Conservative Approach:** Aristotle defined a state as a collective body of citizens. Citizenship was not to be determined by residence since the resident aliens and slaves also shared a common residence with citizens but were not citizens.

▷ **Definition:** He defines a citizen as a person who has the power to take part in the deliberative or judicial administration of any state. For Aristotle a citizen was one who shared power in polis, and unlike Plato, did not distinguish between "an active ruling group and a politically passive community".

▷ **Who Are Not Citizens: Young** are immature and the **old** are infirm. **Women** lack deliberative faculty and leisure to understand politics. And **slaves** lack the intellectual capacity.

▷ **A Good Citizen:** Aristotle prescribed a good citizen as someone who could live in harmony with the constitution and had sufficient leisure time to devote himself to the tasks and responsibilities of citizenship.

> **William Ebenstein:** *"Aristotle's idea of citizenship is that of the economically independent gentleman who has enough experience, education, and leisure to devote himself to active citizenship, for citizens must not lead the life of mechanics or tradesmen, for such life is inimical to virtue."* Thus, he regarded citizenship as a bond forged by the intimacy of participation in public affairs.

Critical Evaluation and Contemporary Relevance

Aristotle's theory may not be regarded as democratic and desirable. It is narrow conception of citizenship. However, his theory can't be disregarded completely as he makes sensible argument that citizenship is a duty. If citizens can't make qualitative participation in the affairs of the state, such persons will be citizens only in formal sense.

Aristotle's Theory of Slavery

Aristotle justifies slavery (on grounds of expediency), which in fact was the order of the day (slavery is natural). He tried to explain the relevance and use of slavery, an institution that was universal. Aristotle defended slavery both from the point of view of the slave and the master, state, and the householder.

▷ **Necessity:** he finds slavery essential to a household and defends it as natural and, therefore, moral.

▷ **Utilitarian view:** a slave is a living possession of his master and is an instrument of action.

▷ **Conventional and natural slaves:** conventional slaves had reason but were prisoners of war and were made slaves. Natural slaves lacked reason, hence had to be under the permanent subordination of the master.

▷ **Natural institution:** aristotle assumes that nature is universally ruled by the contrast of the superior (master) and inferior (slave).

▷ **Benefits of slavery:** master can enhance his virtue and participate in political affairs. Slaves can develop some virtue in company of his master. State would be benefitted with the contribution of masters.

"For that some should rule and others be ruled is a thing not only necessary, but expedient; from the hour of their birth, the same are marked out for subjection others for rule". - Aristotle

Critical Evaluation and Contemporary Relevance

Survival of the fittest principle in nature. But it need not be a principle in the society. In contemporary times no amount of utility of institution can justify slavery. Human dignity can't be compromised.

Immanuel Kant: *"Each man is an end in itself. No one ought to treat other person as a means to an end."*

Aristotle's Theory of Property

Aristotle's theory of property is an attempt to criticise Plato's theory of communism. Aristotle has analysed three types of properties:

1. **Common Ownership and Common Use:** Rejected (everyone's property is no one's responsibility and it is non-motivating).
2. **Common Ownership and Individual Use:** Rejected (neither logical nor practical).
3. **Individual Ownership and Common Use:** Proposed (Property as source of achievement, motivation and social stability).

Aristotle's Theory of Constitution

Aristotle has given the theory of constitution after studying 158 constitutions. Based on his study, he devised a classification which became a guide for all the subsequent philosophers who tried to classify government.

This basis enables us to distinguish between the pure and corrupt forms of government. This is because the **true end of the state** is the perfection of its members and the degree of devotion to this end is the criterion to judge whether a government is pure or corrupt.

Classification of Governments

Pure form	Perverted form
Monarchy/Royalty: With supreme virtue as its guiding principle (best form, but not best practicable)	**Tyranny:** Representing force, selfishness (worst form)
Aristocracy: Representing a mixture of virtue and wealth	**Oligarchy:** Representing the greed of wealth
Polity: Representing martial and medium virtues, power resting with the middle class people	**Democracy:** Representing the principle of equality with power in the hands of the poor (second worst form of government)

136

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Polity is the best practicable form of government: We can see the application of his principle of Golden Mean. Polity is golden mean of Oligarchy and Democracy. Polity is rule of middle class and avoid extremes of two systems. Since, both rich and poor trust middle class, there will be stability. Middle class possess reason and lack arrogance.

Aristotle's Theory of Revolution

The search for stability through polity made Aristotle examine the causes for instability, change and revolution and prescribe remedies against unnecessary and incessant change.

Aristotle points out that there are varying degrees of revolution. A revolution may take the form of a change of constitution of state, or the revolutionaries may try to grasp political power without changing the constitution.

As **Prof. Ebenstein** has rightly pointed out Politics of Aristotle is more a book on the art of government than a systematic exposition of political philosophy.

In order to diagnose a revolution, we must consider the temper of the revolutionaries and their motives and the causes and occasions of revolution. Aristotle classifies the causes of revolution under two groups:

General Causes of Revolutions	Particular Causes of Revolution
▷ **Psychological motives:** Desire for equality in an oligarchy and inequality ▷ **The objectives in Mind:** Profit, honour, insolence, fear of superiority in some form, contempt, election intrigues, wilful negligence, fear of opposites, etc.	▷ **Poverty:** "poverty is the parent of revolution and crime". ▷ Demagogues: In democracy the most important cause of revolution is the unprincipled character of the popular leaders. ▷ **Widening disparity:** In Aristocracies, when the number of people benefiting become smaller or when the disparity between rich and poor becomes wider.

Remedies to Prevent Revolution

▷ **Political obligation:** To inculcate the spirit of obedience to law.

▷ **Distributive justice:** Too much power should not be allowed to concentrate in the hands of one man or one class of men.

▷ **Accountability:** Public administration, particularly financial administration, should be subjected to public scrutiny.

▷ **Rectificatory justice:** Grievance redressal of the citizens and principle of proportion.

Contemporary Relevance

Aristotle's theory of revolution is particularly relevant in present times. We can relate the theory with protests in countries such as South Africa (2021), Arab Spring, etc.

Aristotle's Theroy of Justice

▷ **Justice as Foundation:** Like Plato, Aristotle believed that justice is the very essence of the state, and that no polity can endure for a long time unless it is founded on a right scheme of justice. Aristotle believes that justice saves the states from destruction; it makes the states and political life pure and healthy.

"The goodness in the sphere of politics is justice, and justice contains what tends to promote the common interest." - (Aristotle)

▷ **Justice and Proportional Equality:** Distributive justice assigns to every man his due according to his contributions to the society. Distributive justice is identifiable with proportionate equality. Proportionate equality is grounded in the principle of fair and reasonable inequality of treatment.

CRITICAL EVALUATION AND CONTEMPORARY RELEVANCE

▷ Aristotle's theory of justice is actually justification of injustice. He believes that merit should be the principle of distributive justice.

▷ However, according to contemporary scholars, merit is a flawed argument. There is a link between merit and opportunity or circumstances. In society like India where there have been massive inequalities and injustice in certain sections of society, merit

"It is unjust to treat equals unequally, it is equally unjust to treat unequal equally." - (Aristotle)

137

alone cannot be the principal so long as there is no social levelling. Hence, the **Constitution of India** goes for the **principle of positive discrimination** in favour of weaker sections.

Aristotle on Law

Aristotle is considered the Father of Constitutionalism or Rule of Law.

Context: Criticism of Plato's theory of Philosopher King where he gives absolute powers to the Philosopher King.

"The rule of law is preferable to that of a single citizen: even if it be the better course to have individuals ruling, they should be made law-guardians or ministers of the laws". **(Aristotle)**

▷ **Distinct Types of Authority:** Political authority differed from the authority that a husband exercised over his wife and children. The authority that was wielded by a constitutional ruler over one's subject was different from the one that the master wielded over his slave, since the latter lacked reason to rule himself.

▷ **Collective Wisdom and the Superiority of Law:** Aristotle, unlike Plato, contended that the **collective wisdom** of the people was superior to that of the wisest ruler or legislator. Law is a reason without passion.

THREE ELEMENTS OF CONSTITUTIONAL RULE

1. It was a rule in common interest of the populace, as compared to a rule by a faction or a tyrant which was in the interest of a ruler, one or few.
2. A government could not act contrary to the constitution.
3. Constitutional government meant willing subjects ruled by consent, rather than by force

Aristotle on Law

▷ Aristotle is rightly regarded as the **"Father of Political Science"**, as by his meticulous and painstaking research of political institutions and behaviour he provided the first framework of studying politics empirically and scientifically.

▷ His **classification of constitutions** provided the first major thrust for studying comparative politics.

▷ His most lasting importance was in his **advocacy of the rule of law** rather than personalised rule by the wisest and the best. The entire edifice of modern civilisation is based on respect for constitutional provisions and well-defined laws.

▷ Aristotle's **practical prescriptions** have been more lasting and more influential than the radical and provocative ideas of Plato.

Aristotle is for the best form of government but one that is within the realm of possibility. The scientist in Aristotle does not allow him to reach the extremes. He believes in the **rule of golden mean.**

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **Aristotle**, one of the most influential political thinkers, is known for his empirical approach to politics. His theory of the state, citizenship, justice, and law continues to shape political philosophy, balancing ideals with practical governance.

▷ **Aristotle's** political philosophy focuses on the nature of the state, citizenship, and justice. Unlike Plato, he advocates for a government based on reality and practical solutions, emphasizing the **rule of law** over individual rulers.

Interlinkages

▷ **Aristotle's** emphasis on **rule of law** and constitutional governance links to **Modern Political Theory,** where thinkers like Hobbes, Locke, and Rousseau discuss the relationship between law, authority, and individual rights in a state.

▷ **Aristotle's** concept of **justice** as proportional equality connects to **Indian Political Thought,** particularly the idea of **social justice** in the Indian Constitution, which advocates for **positive discrimination** to uplift marginalized sections of society.

▷ **Aristotle's theory of revolution** links to **Comparative Politics** as it examines causes of political instability. His focus on poverty and **social inequality** as triggers of revolutions can be seen in modern uprisings like the **Arab Spring.**

▷ **Aristotle's** idea of **citizenship** and participation in the political process is reflected in **Democratic Theory,** which stresses the importance of active, informed participation in democracy, aligning with **participatory democracy** seen in modern political systems.

138

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Aristotle's theory of the state** being the highest community can be seen in modern **constitutional democracies,** where the state is tasked with promoting the **common good.** For example, in **Scandinavian countries** like Sweden and Denmark, the welfare state ensures social safety nets, such as free healthcare and education, for all citizens, reflecting Aristotle's ideal of the state's role in providing a good life for its people.

▷ Aristotle's theory of justice, which emphasizes **proportional equality,** directly connects to contemporary **affirmative action** policies in India. The reservation system, designed to uplift **Scheduled Castes, Scheduled Tribes, and Other Backward Classes,** aims to provide equal opportunities by addressing historical injustices and reducing social inequality, much like Aristotle's principle of giving people their due.

▷ **Aristotle's belief in the rule of law** over personal rule can be observed in the judicial activism of modern **democratic societies.** In **India,** the **Supreme Court** has often intervened to protect citizens' **fundamental rights,** as seen in **Maneka Gandhi v. Union of India,** where the court emphasized the importance of due process, ensuring that no law violates individual rights.

▷ **Aristotle's theory of revolution,** which highlights causes like **poverty** and **social inequality,** is reflected in the **2020-21 farmer protests** in India. These protests were driven by the perception that new **farm laws** would disproportionately affect the **poor farmers,** exacerbating economic disparities, which mirrors Aristotle's concerns about societal instability caused by unfair distribution of resources.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ **Aristotle's** ideas on governance, justice, and the role of law provide a strong foundation for modern political thought. His emphasis on balance, **law,** and practical action remains relevant in today's political systems.

▷ Despite criticisms of some of his views, **Aristotle's** theory of politics stands as a significant contribution. His belief in the **rule of law** and stable constitutions continues to influence contemporary political structures and debates.
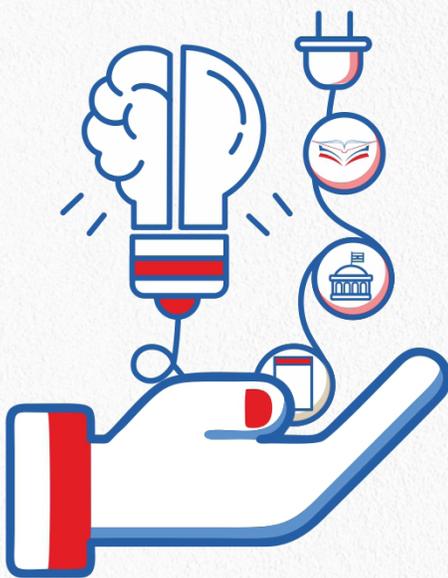
MACHIAVELLI

"It is better to be feared than loved, if you cannot be both." – Niccolò Machiavelli, The Prince

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

⊕ **Critically examine Machiavelli's views on religion and politics (2020)**
⊕ **Machiavelli's secularism. Comment (2020)**
⊕ **Critically examine Machiavelli's views on religion and politics (2018)**
⊕ **Compare and contrast the views of Kautilya and Machiavelli on Statecraft (2015)**
⊕ **Explain how Machiavelli's application of empirical method to human affairs marks an important stage in the evolution of political science (2014)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions explore **Machiavelli's views on religion and politics,** emphasizing his **secularism** and pragmatic approach to political governance. His use of the **empirical method** in analyzing human affairs marks a significant development in **political science.** Comparisons between **Kautilya** and Machiavelli on **statecraft** reveal commonalities in their focus on power and strategy but with differing cultural and philosophical foundations. Machiavelli's views underscore the importance of **realpolitik**, separating political action from religious and moral concerns.

Key Facts about Machiavelli

▷ **Methodology:** empiricist, historical, realist
▷ **Known for:** "The Prince," his influential treatise on politics and power
▷ **Key Ideas:** The importance of stability and order in a strong government, the use of deceit and force when necessary to maintain power, the separation of morality and politics
▷ **Impact:** Considered one of the founders of modern political science; his ideas have influenced political leaders and scholars for centuries. He is often associated with the idea of "Machiavellianism," which refers to the use of cunning and deception in politics.

KEY FACTS...

Major Works: The Prince, Discourses on Livy, The Art of War, The History of Florence

Key Ideas: Political Realism, Virtù and Fortuna, The Ends Justify the Means, Republicanism and Mixed Government, The Role of the Military in Politics, The Importance of Fear over Love in Ruling

Major Critics: Jean-Jacques Rousseau, Thomas Hobbes, Karl Marx, Friedrich Engels, Gandhi

Introduction

Niccolò Machiavelli, a key figure bridging medieval and modern political thought, was pivotal in the Renaissance's cultural and intellectual revival. Known as the first modern political thinker, he emphasized empiricism, realism, and the centrality of power. His advocacy for separating ethics from politics and his focus on historical analysis reshaped political theory, offering a new framework for understanding governance and political dynamics.

Politics as Management of Power

Centrality of Power: Power was central to Machiavelli's political theory. He viewed politics fundamentally as the management of power, focusing on how rulers maintain and exercise authority.

Methodology: Machiavelli's methodology is characterized by empiricism, historical analysis, and realism. His approach to political science marked a significant evolution due to its reliance on empirical observation and real-world evidence.

The Prince: Machiavelli is best known for "The Prince," his seminal work on politics and power. This treatise is influential for its **pragmatic advice** on governance and power dynamics.

Key Ideas

▷ **Stability and Order:** Machiavelli emphasized the importance of stability and order for a strong government.

▷ **Use of Deceit and Force:** He argued that deceit and force may be necessary to maintain power.

▷ **Separation of Morality and Politics:** Machiavelli advocated for the separation of morality from political strategy.

Views on Governance

▷ **Stable Authority and Order:** Machiavelli saw stable political authority as essential for social cohesion and moral regeneration.

▷ **Republican Liberty vs. Tyranny:** While he cherished republican liberty, he was also mindful of the threats posed by tyranny. His work "The Prince" focused on security and unity, while "The Discourses" emphasized liberty and republicanism.

Machiavelli is considered one of the founders of modern political science. His ideas, often associated with "Machiavellianism," have influenced political leaders and scholars for centuries, highlighting the use of cunning and deception in politics.

Machiavelli's views on Human Nature

Machiavelli's views on human nature emphasize self-interest and conflict, shaping his pragmatic approach to effective governance and power management.

▷ **Inherent Characteristics:** Machiavelli believed individuals are inherently wicked, selfish, and driven by personal gain. He characterized human nature as restless, ambitious, and prone to constant conflict, with goodness emerging only under compulsion or personal benefit.

▷ **Historical Perspective and Political Animal:** Machiavelli noted that humans tend to glorify the past, criticize the present, and hope for a better future. He echoed Aristotle's view of the individual as a political animal, driven by antisocial and anarchic tendencies.

▷ **Self-Interest and Behaviour:** Machiavelli argued that individuals are inherently antisocial, selfish, and greedy. For instance, people might easily forgive personal violence but resent the loss of property. He viewed self-interest as a natural, not sinful, aspect of behaviour.

▷ **Rulership Advice:** Based on his view of human nature, Machiavelli advised rulers to aim to be feared rather than loved to maintain order and stability. However, he emphasized that a ruler should avoid being hated by not harming property or women and using force only when necessary and justifiable.

Criticism of Machiacelli's view on Human Nature

▷ **Contextual Limitations: Sabine** criticized Machiavelli for being narrowly dated and context-specific, arguing his ideas reflect only the Italian society of his time.

▷ **Focus on Selfishness:** Machiavelli's emphasis on selfishness and discord is seen as limited, not accounting for broader or universal social contexts.

▷ **Inconsistencies:** Machiavelli's belief that individuals prioritize life, family, and property yet might sacrifice family for personal goals reveals inherent inconsistencies.

Views on Corruption and Civic Virtue

▷ **Causes of Corruption:** Machiavelli attributed corruption to **wealth without merit, luxurious habits,** and a **lack of martial spirit,** leading to public value disregard, inequality, and lawlessness.

▷ **Impact on Political Participation:** Corruption marginalized ordinary citizens from politics and required exceptional measures, such as strong rule by a prince with significant powers, to address it.

▷ **Role of Civic Virtue:** Machiavelli emphasized public virtue, including patriotism and public-spiritedness, as essential for ending corruption, fostering individual development, protecting freedom, and preventing tyranny.

141

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Views on Religion

- **Secularism and Church Critique:** Machiavelli, often termed the **'father of Western secularism,'** criticized the church for failing to provide moral guidance and contributing to Italy's division.
- **Utilitarian Role of Religion:** He saw religion as essential for social and political life, providing divine sanction for rulers' decisions and maintaining discipline, but viewed it strictly as a tool for influence and control.
- **Critique of Christianity:** Machiavelli **criticized Christianity** for elevating humility over action, viewing it as contrary to his preference for men of action over contemplative figures.

Despite controversial views, Machiavelli's analysis laid the groundwork for modern Western secularism.

Machiavelli's Views on State

Machiavelli's contributions fundamentally reshaped the concept of political authority and statecraft, laying the groundwork for modern theories of legal sovereignty.

- **Secularism and State Supremacy:** Machiavelli emancipated the state from medieval religious influences, advocating for its supremacy over individuals. He drew from **Roman expansionist policies,** stressing the importance of territorial growth for the state's survival.
- **Government Preferences:** In **"The Discourses,"** Machiavelli championed republican government for virtuous societies, valuing collective wisdom and political equality. However, in corrupt societies, he endorsed a strong monarchy to preserve stability and the common good, opposing oligarchy.
- **Legacy:** Machiavelli's ideas on **secularization**, state expansion, and governance provided a foundation for understanding modern state authority. His vision of a united Italy and his advocacy for flexible governance based on societal conditions remain influential in political theory.

Machiavelli's emphasis on state authority, expansion, and adaptive governance underscores his enduring impact on the modern understanding of political stability and sovereignty.

Qualities of a Prince According to Machiavelli

Machiavelli's counsel to rulers in "The Prince" offers a pragmatic approach to governance, emphasizing power consolidation and strategic decision-making.

- **Centralization of Power:** Machiavelli advises that **the prince must prioritize retaining power** solely in his hands, as shared power can be undermined. He cautions against trusting self-interested individuals and advocates for a ruler to be feared rather than loved, given that fear is more controllable and reliable.
- **Dual Qualities:** Echoing Plato, Machiavelli suggests that the prince should embody **both the cunning of a fox and the strength of a lion.** This combination allows the ruler to navigate complex political landscapes effectively.
- **Rational Decision-Making:** Machiavelli emphasizes the importance of **empirical evidence and logical reasoning in political decisions.** He advocates for calculated, strategic actions rather than impulsive behaviour, stressing the need to understand timing and context for optimal results.
- **Use of Power:** Machiavelli recommends a **blend of hard and soft power.** The prince should be prepared to either win over or eliminate opponents, with violence being a last resort. When necessary, violence should be decisive and thorough, ensuring that it prevents any possibility of retaliation.

Machiavelli's guide to rulership centres on effective power management, strategic foresight, and a balanced application of force. His pragmatic approach remains influential in the study of political strategy and leadership.

Qualities of a Prince According to Machiavelli

Machiavelli is celebrated as a pioneering figure in modern political science and a foundational realist in Western political thought.

- **Realist Perspective:** Machiavelli, through **"The Prince,"** is recognized as a central figure in political realism. His work offers pragmatic advice for rulers, detailing the mechanics of governance, strategies for state strengthening, power

expansion, and avoiding decline.

▷ **Dual Morality:** Machiavelli introduces the concept of **"Dual Morality,"** where the **ruler operates beyond conventional law and morality.** In his view, **the end justifies the means,** emphasizing the success of actions in enhancing state power over ethical considerations.

▷ **Power Politics:** Machiavelli **prioritizes power politics,** focusing on effective means to achieve political goals rather than adherence to ideals. His realpolitik approach centres on rational choices to expand and consolidate power.

▷ **Critique:** While influential, **Machiavelli's focus on power acquisition** often neglects the ethical implications and the relationship between means and ends. His theories, emphasizing practical success over moral constraints, have shaped the realist perspective in political science.

Machiavelli's contributions to political realism highlight a **pragmatic approach** to statecraft, prioritizing effective power management and strategic decisions, albeit with controversial ethical implications.

Machiavelli's ideas, despite their controversial nature, provide essential perspectives for analysing and navigating the complexities of contemporary politics. They offer a realistic lens for examining power dynamics, leadership, and statecraft in today's world.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ Niccolò Machiavelli is often regarded as a pioneer of modern political theory. His work, especially The Prince, emphasized pragmatic power dynamics and realpolitik, offering advice to rulers on maintaining control and stability.

▷ Machiavelli's secularism and realism set him apart as a political thinker. His theories focused on power, statecraft, and the practicalities of governance, often separating morality from political decision-making for the greater good of the state.

Interlinkages

▷ **Political Realism**
  ▸ Machiavelli's ideas are foundational to **political realism**, emphasizing the pursuit of power and state interests above morality. This connects with **international relations** theories, where power dynamics and pragmatic decision-making are prioritized, much like in **realpolitik** diplomacy.

▷ **Machiavelli and Chanakya,** despite different contexts, both emphasized **monarchy, conquest, and power.** Chanakya focused on a king's duty to uphold **justice, prosperity,** and **spiritual growth,** while Machiavelli stressed **strategic war** and **stability** for long-term governance.

▷ **Democracy**
  ▸ Machiavelli's criticism of **democratic governance** connects with the ongoing debates in **Indian political thought** regarding the effectiveness of **democracy** in achieving stability. His focus on **strong leadership** reflects modern concerns about the challenges of democratic systems in delivering swift, decisive governance.

▷ **State Sovereignty**
  ▸ Machiavelli's ideas on **state sovereignty** and **territorial expansion** resonate with modern discussions of **sovereignty** in international relations. His emphasis on the need for rulers to maintain independence and power ties into contemporary debates on **national security** and **territorial integrity.**

▷ **Machiavelli and Governance Models**
  ▸ Machiavelli's preference for a strong monarchy or republic over unstable systems relates to contemporary discussions of **governance models** in emerging democracies. The debate between **centralized authority** versus **democratic decentralization** continues to echo his theories of political stability.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Modern Leadership**
  ▸ Machiavelli's **pragmatic approach to leadership** continues to resonate in today's political climate. Leaders in global politics, like **Vladimir Putin** or **Donald Trump**, often embrace Machiavellian tactics such as manipulation of public perception and the use of **realpolitik.**

143

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Corporate Governance

- Machiavelli's emphasis on **power consolidation** and **ruthless decision-making** can be observed in **corporate governance** strategies. In India, powerful corporate leaders often apply similar Machiavellian principles of **control** and **expansion** to maintain dominance in highly competitive industries.

Religion

- Machiavelli's **secularism** challenges the intertwined nature of **religion and politics**, which remains a critical issue in **Middle Eastern politics** today. His ideas influence the ongoing debates about the role of **religion** in governance and public life in countries like **Turkey** and **Iran**.

Machiavelli's Views on War and Strategy

- Machiavelli's thoughts on the importance of **military strength** and **strategic alliances** provide insight into the ongoing **Russia-Ukraine conflict.** His emphasis on **power dynamics** and **realpolitik** offers a framework to understand **Russia's territorial ambitions** and the global response.

Conclusion for the Answers

- Machiavelli's views on **power** and **statecraft** continue to influence contemporary politics. His **realpolitik** approach and emphasis on the effective use of power offer valuable insights into modern governance and international relations.
- Though controversial, **Machiavelli's** ideas on leadership, power, and **realpolitik** have shaped political thought. His emphasis on **pragmatism** and the balance between **ethics and politics** remains relevant in today's political landscape.

THOMAS HOBBES

"Life in the state of nature is solitary, poor, nasty, brutish, and short." **- Thomas Hobbes (Leviathan)**

Previous year Questions (PYQs)
⊕ **State of Nature as State of War (Hobbes) (2023)**
⊕ **Individualism is inherent in Hobbes' absolutist ideology. Comment. (2022)**
⊕ **Hobbesian notion of Political obligation. Comment (2017)**
⊕ **"How would I and my fellow human beings behave if we were to find ourselves in a state of nature, and what does this behavior tell us about our innate predispositions?" (Hobbes) Comment (2016)**
⊕ **Comment on the assertion of Laslett that Filmer and not Hobbes was the main antagonist of Locke. (2013)**
⊕ **"Covenants without swords are but words and of no strength to secure a man at all." (Hobbes) Comment (2013)**

Insights from PYQs
The questions focus on Hobbes' view of the State of Nature, which he defines as a State of War, reflecting his belief in humanity's inherent conflict. His absolutist ideology emphasizes the need for a powerful sovereign to ensure political obligation and security. Hobbes' claim that covenants without swords are meaningless highlights his emphasis on authority and force in governance. Discussions around individualism and innate predispositions further explore Hobbes' view of human nature. The critique by Laslett about Filmer versus Hobbes as Locke's main antagonist provides insight into Hobbes' influence on later political thought.

Background

Background- English philosopher (1588-1679) known for his influential works in political philosophy and social contract theory.

Major Work- "Leviathan" (1651)

Social Contract- Hobbes proposed that individuals enter into a social contract, sacrificing some freedoms to establish a sovereign authority that ensures order and prevents the state of war.

State of Nature- Hobbes' concept of the state of nature depicts humans living in a state of constant conflict, driven by their self-interest and lacking a common authority to maintain peace.

> **KEY FACTS...**
>
> **Major Works:** Leviathan (1651), The Elements of Law (1640), De Cive (1642)
>
> **Key Ideas:** Absolute Monarchy, Social Contract, State of Nature, Human Nature and Egoism, The Sovereign's **Authority**
>
> **Major Critics:** John Locke, Jean-Jacques Rousseau, Immanuel Kant

Leviathan- Hobbes used the metaphor of the "Leviathan," a powerful sea creature, to represent the all-powerful sovereign authority necessary to keep society orderly and prevent chaos.

Absolute Sovereignty- Hobbes advocated for absolute sovereignty, arguing that a strong central authority with unlimited power is essential for maintaining social order and preventing societal breakdown.

In narrow sense, democracy is defined as a form of government and in broader sense it is defined as a way of life. The roots of democracy can be traced to the Ancient Greece.

In Ancient Greece, direct democracy was practiced in Athens. Though Aristotle favoured democracy, he considered Polity as the best practicable form of government. For him, democracy is a perverted form of polity.

Influence- Hobbes' ideas have had a significant impact on political theory, influencing concepts of government, authority, and the social contract, and sparking debates that continue to this day.

145

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Introduction

Hobbes was born prematurely in 1588 in England during a period of great turmoil as the country faced the imminent threat of the Spanish Armada. **He experienced turbulent phases of British history, including the Puritan revolution of 1641 and the Civil War, which plunged the nation into anarchy and a lack of security. As a result, Hobbes' philosophy focused on the importance of order and self-preservation.** He lived during a time of significant constitutional crisis in England, marked by intense debates between advocates of the Divine Right of Kings and proponents of constitutional rule based on popular consent.

His **method was deductive and geometrical** rather than empirical and experimental.

Views on Hobbes

▷ According to **Michael Oakeshott:** "The Leviathan is the greatest, perhaps the sole, masterpiece of political philosophy in the English language".

▷ According to **William Ebenstein,** The Leviathan is not an apology for the Stuart monarchy nor a grammar of despotic government but the first general theory of politics in the English language'

▷ According to **Macpherson,** Hobbes was a scholar of bourgeois class. Hobbes was **materialist, utilitarian and greatest of all individualists.** He was the **one** who gave the **theory of the right to life.**

Views on Human Nature

Hobbes' view on human nature is discussed below:

▷ **Secular Foundations:** Unlike thinkers who relied on divine concepts like the "Idea of Good," Hobbes based his theories on what he saw as the core aspects of human behaviour.

▷ **Individualism and Self-Interest:** Hobbes disagreed with the prevailing view of humans as inherently social. In his view, individuals were isolated and driven by self-preservation. This self-interest manifested in a constant pursuit of pleasure and avoidance of pain.

▷ **Motivation by Pleasure and Pain:** Pleasure and pain were the fundamental motivators for Hobbes, pushing people to seek one and avoid the other. Even human will stem from these basic needs, not from any spiritual source.

▷ **Fear and Power as Driving Forces:** Hobbes believed fear, particularly the fear of death, played a crucial role. This fear, along with the constant drive for power, fuelled human actions.

▷ **Equality of Potential:** Hobbes saw people as essentially equal in their potential to achieve their goals, with cunning being just as valuable as physical strength.

▷ **Active and Goal-Oriented Beings:** Despite their self-interest, Hobbes acknowledged humans as active agents, constantly striving and willing.

Thus, Hobbes' view of human nature painted a picture of self-preservation machines, driven by pleasure, pain, and fear, all operating in a world where cunning and power were essential tools for survival.

State of Nature in Hobbes

According to Hobbes, the state of nature was a condition where individuals were selfish and egoistic. It was a dreadful state characterized by complete liberty and a natural right to everything, including other people's bodies. In this state, there was no room for industry, agriculture, trade, or civilized living. Life was marked by constant fear, danger, and potential warfare among individuals competing for honor, wealth, and authority.

▷ The principal cause of conflict in the state of nature was rooted within human nature itself. **Three psychological factors—competition, diffidence, and glory—fed the atmosphere of perpetual fear and strife. Power was sought after because it ensured access to resources necessary for survival and provided pleasure and contentment.**

▷ Mutual suspicion and hostility prevailed, and the only rule individuals recognized was that one would take and retain as long as one had the power to do so.

▷ In the state of nature, there was no common authority, leading to the absence of distinctions between just and unjust.

Without a common superior, there could be no law, and without law, there could be no justice. The state of nature lacked any conception of right and wrong because it lacked a standard of conduct.

HOW CAN AN INDIVIDUAL ESCAPE FROM THE CONDITIONS IN STATE OF NATURE?

Once the wretchedness of the state of nature is recognized, it becomes apparent that action must be taken to alter it. The initial step involves individuals choosing to pursue peace and establishing the necessary arrangements to achieve and maintain it. It becomes evident that the sole means of attaining peace is for each person to relinquish their inherent right to acquire and protect everything by any means they deem necessary.

▷ According to Hobbes, this endeavour must be a collective one, as it is reasonable for an individual to renounce their right to harm others only if everyone else agrees to do likewise.

▷ **He calls this collective renunciation of each individual's right to all things the "social contract."** The social contract inverts the state of nature while also building upon some key passions responsible for the state of nature: it amounts to a more intelligent way to preserve oneself and safely acquire goods.

The Features of Social Contract in Hobbes

The purpose of the contract signed by individuals in the state of nature is to escape the constant warfare between everyone. Hobbes introduces a new interpretation of the social contract, which is an agreement between the ruler and the ruled, in order to establish a commonwealth or state.

▷ To ensure their escape from the state of nature, people give up their natural rights to everything and, through mutual consent, establish a third party or group of individuals.

▷ This entity is granted the authority to enforce the contract, use force, and act on behalf of everyone. Each person enters into an agreement with every other person in the following manner.

He argues *"I authorise and give up my right of governing myself to this man or to this assembly of man on the condition that thou give up thy right to him, and authorise all his actions in like manner"*.

It is clear from the above statement that **no individual can surrender his right to self-preservation.** The multitude of conflicting wills is replaced, not by a common will but a single representative will

▷ By the transfer of the natural rights to each man, the **recipient becomes their representative and is invested with authority to deliberate,** will and act in place of the deliberation, will and action of each separate man.

According to William Ebenstein Hobbesian, social contract is made between subjects and subjects and not between subjects and sovereign. The sovereign is not a party to the contract, but its creation.

1. **Contract is irrevocable, men cannot annualize the contract.**

2. **They cannot repudiate their obligation.**

3. **Sovereign cannot commit any breach of covenant because he is not a party to it.**

They are also called as normative or philosophical theories, as they emphasize on democratic values such as liberty, equality, dignity, fraternity, etc.

Since they focus on democratic values, they can also be called as substantive model of democracy.

Why Absolute Sovereignty in Hobbes?

To ensure compliance with the social contract, Hobbes argues that there needs to be a visible power that can enforce it and compel individuals to keep their promises. This power serves as a reminder of the purpose of the social contract and in-stills fear of punishment, motivating people to uphold their obligations.

▷ **Establishment of Sovereign Power:** Sovereign power is established when individuals cede their own strength to a single entity, which then holds the authority to enforce obedience and control public opinions.

▷ **Alignment of Individual Will:** Hobbes argues that individual will should align with that of the sovereign, as desiring peace logically requires supporting all necessary measures to maintain it.

▷ **Forms and Criteria of Sovereign Power:** The sovereign, or Leviathan, can take various forms such as monarchy, aristocracy, or democracy. The essential criterion is that it possesses absolute power to uphold the social contract and determine necessary actions for its defence.

147

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Theory of Absolute Sovereignty

The core of Hobbes' political philosophy lies in his concept of sovereignty. According to Hobbes, the sovereign power is indivisible, unrestricted, and unable to be transferred or relinquished, and enduring.

▷ **Establishment of State and Government:** The social contract simultaneously establishes both the state and government, granting the sovereign authority to enact legitimate laws.

▷ **Absolute Sovereignty:** Sovereignty is absolute and unbounded, not subject to any conditions, rights of subjects, or customary laws.

▷ **Lawful Authority:** The sovereign, appointed by consent, cannot harm subjects and acts lawfully in creating and interpreting laws.

▷ **Authority and Obedience:** Individuals cannot object to the sovereign's actions as they have granted him complete authority on their behalf.

▷ **Powers of the Sovereign:** The sovereign has full authority to initiate war, establish peace, impose taxes, and enforce punishments.

▷ **Source of Authority:** The sovereign is the ultimate source of all administrative, legislative, and judicial authority, with law being the sovereign's command.

▷ **Protection and Preservation:** The sovereign must protect the people both externally and internally, as peace and preservation are the basis for the sovereign's creation.

Thus, Hobbesian sovereign represents the ultimate, supreme and single authority in the state and there is no right of resistance against him except in case of self-defence.

According to Hobbes, any act of disobedience of a subject is unjust because it is against the covenant. **Covenants without swords are but mere words.** Division or limitation of sovereignty means destruction of sovereignty which means that men are returning to the old state of nature where life will be intolerably miserable.

Criticisms of Hobbesian Theory of Sovereignty

Critics have accused Hobbes of being the ideological precursor to totalitarian ideologies such as fascism and communism. However, William Ebenstein refutes these allegations based on the following arguments:

▷ **Government through Covenant:** Hobbes establishes government through a covenant that transfers all power, which is fundamentally different from the totalitarian regimes of the modern era.

▷ **State Objectives:** Hobbes' conception of the state aims at maintaining order and security for the well-being of citizens, whereas modern totalitarian states have anti-individualistic and anti-hedonistic objectives.

▷ **Equality Before Law:** Hobbes' authoritarian state lacks a characteristic feature of modern totalitarianism, namely, inequality before the law and the resulting personal insecurity.

▷ **Sovereign Form:** Hobbes allows for the sovereign to be either an individual or an assembly of individuals, whereas modern totalitarianism emphasizes the leadership principle and charismatic figures.

▷ **War and State Formation:** Hobbes acknowledges war as a driving force for the establishment of a state, but he does not glorify war in his work Leviathan. In contrast, totalitarian regimes often view war favourably and consider imperialist war as the pinnacle of national life.

As **Prof. Sabine** has rightly pointed out, in **Hobbesian political philosophy both individualism and absolutism go hand in hand.** Granting absolute and unlimited power to the state is, in essence, an attempt to provide a happy and tension free life to the individuals.

Law as the Command of Sovereign

Natural law or customs and can only attain the status of Law only when willed and ordained by the sovereign. He brought to completion the process of subordinating the church to the state and swept aside the limitations of Divine Law, of Constitutional law and property rights that Bodin had imposed on his sovereign.

Liberty is Where, Law is Silent

A citizen is free to act as they please in matters not commanded or forbidden by the sovereign. However, the sovereign's command cannot override the individual's right to self-preservation. If the sovereign orders someone to take their own life, they are not obligated to comply because the purpose of establishing civil society is to preserve life.

CONDITIONS FOR OBEDIENCE TO THE SOVEREIGN

▷ **Permissible Disobedience:** Disobedience to the sovereign is allowed only if it does not undermine the sovereign's intended purpose. Otherwise, refusal to obey is not permitted, as it leads to a return to the state of nature where concepts of right and wrong dissolve.

▷ **Obligation and Sovereign Power:** Subjects are obliged to obey the sovereign as long as the sovereign can provide protection. The obligation lasts only while the sovereign effectively ensures security.

▷ **Right of Self-Protection:** Individuals retain the natural right to self-protection when no external protection is available. This right cannot be surrendered by any covenant. If the sovereign fails to suppress rebellion and the rebels establish a new regime that provides security, the legitimacy of the original sovereign is lost. The new regime, such as that led by Oliver Cromwell, becomes the true commonwealth.

▷ **Effective Power and Legitimacy:** A government must have effective power to be considered legitimate. Without it, the sovereign's authority is invalidated.

Hobbes as the Father of Liberal view of Politics

Hobbes's political thought, with its emphasis on the absolute power of the sovereign, may appear contradictory to liberal theory, which focuses on protecting individual rights. However, Hobbes's ideas laid the groundwork for the liberal perspective.

▷ **On Politics and Individual Rights:** Hobbes argues that politics is driven by individuals' desire for life preservation and possession protection, with government serving these ends. Happiness is the continuous success in obtaining desires. Individuals have no inherent duties to others; obligations arise only as means to personal ends. Even in a commonwealth, they retain their natural right to self-preservation and are not obligated to submit to capital punishment or likely death in war.

▷ **Hobbes and Liberalism:** Hobbes's understanding of individual rights is narrower than that of liberal theorists, but he introduces the notion of inviolable natural rights and the idea that politics should support individual happiness. His concept of representative government suggests the government should ensure safety and protection, not rule over citizens.

▷ **Influence on John Locke:** Locke built upon Hobbes's ideas, developing modern political liberalism. Key elements include the state of nature, consent of the governed, and the political community serving basic needs, particularly property preservation. Locke's ideas influenced the founders of the United States, reflected in the Declaration of Independence and the Constitution.

▷ **Controversy and Criticism:** Hobbes's political ideas were and remain controversial. Critics argue his focus on self-interest conflicts with Aristotle's belief that politics should address both basic needs and higher ends. They also believe avoiding fundamental questions impedes the pursuit of wisdom, happiness, and excellence.

▷ **Legacy and Modern Impact:** Supporters argue Hobbes's focus on achievable goals contributes to modern Western security and prosperity, allowing for the pursuit of knowledge and excellence in private life. Studying Hobbes is crucial for understanding the political landscape and framework of the modern world.

Conclusion

Hobbes's **view of individual rights is narrower than other liberal theorists,** focusing on **natural rights** and politics supporting **individual happiness.** His representative government ensures safety, not domination. John Locke expanded on Hobbes, shaping modern political liberalism with ideas like the state of nature and consent of the governed, influencing the **U.S. Declaration of Independence and Constitution.** Hobbes's ideas are controversial, with critics arguing they prioritize self-interest over broader political aims. Supporters contend that Hobbes's focus on achievable goals enhances modern security and prosperity, vital for understanding contemporary politics.

Hobbes's ideas, while critiqued and developed by later thinkers, remain foundational for understanding political philosophy, governance, and social dynamics in modern society.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ Hobbes presented a radically different view of human nature and governance, arguing that in a state of nature, humans are driven by self-interest and conflict. His solution, the social contract, establishes a powerful sovereign to maintain order.

149

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

▷ In the turbulent times of 17th-century England, Thomas Hobbes developed his political philosophy, emphasizing the need for a strong sovereign to ensure social stability and prevent chaos, a theory deeply rooted in his view of human nature.

Interlinkages

▷ **Social Contract and Liberalism**
  ▸ Hobbes' theory of **social contract** influenced later **liberal thinkers** like **John Locke**. While Hobbes emphasized absolute sovereignty for peace, Locke argued for **limited government** and **natural rights**, shaping the modern **liberal conception of governance.**

▷ **State of Nature and Political Theory**
  ▸ Hobbes' **state of nature** (a condition of chaos) contrasts with **Jean-Jacques Rousseau's** more optimistic view of the state of nature. This debate forms a foundation for understanding **state formation** and **political legitimacy** in **comparative politics.**

▷ **Hobbes and Realism (International Relations)**
  ▸ Hobbes' view of human nature and the need for an absolute sovereign is foundational for **political realism** in **international relations.** His idea of a world driven by **self-interest** and **conflict** mirrors the dynamics in global politics today.

▷ **Hobbes and Sovereignty**
  ▸ Hobbes' idea of **absolute sovereignty** informs discussions in **political theory** regarding **legal sovereignty** and **legitimacy**. His views on **power concentration** contrast with theories of **democracy** and **participation**, making it a key point of debate.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Emergency Powers and Executive Authority**
  ▸ In modern democracies, **Hobbes' theory of absolute sovereignty** is relevant during **national emergencies.** For example, **COVID-19 lockdowns** and **curfews** have sparked debates on **executive power.** Hobbes would argue that such strong measures are needed to maintain **order** and **security**.

▷ **State Sovereignty in International Relations**
  ▸ Hobbes' views on **state sovereignty** still shape discussions on **international law** and **diplomacy**. His idea that states must maintain **absolute authority** is reflected in the **UN Security Council's** dominance over international conflicts, where **state power** trumps individual rights.

▷ **Human Nature and Economic Decision-Making**
  ▸ Hobbes' focus on **self-interest** is evident in today's **capitalism**. Companies and individuals prioritize **personal gain,** as seen in **market-driven economies** where **profit maximization** guides actions. His ideas on **fear** and **power dynamics** can explain behavior in **competitive market environments.**

▷ **Political Legitimacy in Authoritarian Regimes**
  ▸ Hobbes' idea of **absolute sovereignty** is mirrored in contemporary **authoritarian regimes** like **North Korea** or **Russia**, where the **sovereign power** is absolute. Leaders justify their rule based on **security** and **order**, drawing from Hobbesian views of the necessity of strong central authority.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ **Hobbes** laid the groundwork for modern political theory by advocating for **absolute sovereignty** to prevent societal collapse. His **social contract theory** continues to influence contemporary debates on **government authority** and **individual rights.**

▷ Although **Hobbes'** ideas on absolute sovereignty have faced criticism, his theory remains relevant in understanding the balance between **state power** and **individual freedoms**, particularly in **modern governance** and **political legitimacy.**

150

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

JOHN LOCKE

"The state of nature has a law of nature to govern it, which obliges everyone: and reason, which is that law, teaches all mankind, who will but consult it, that being all equal and independent, no one ought to harm another in his life, health, liberty, or possessions…". - John Locke (Two Treatises of Government)

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

⊕ **Write on: Locke's Social Contract (2022)**
⊕ **"Covenants without swords are but words and of no strength to secure a man at all." (Hobbes) Comment (2013)**
⊕ **Comment on the assertion of Laslett that Filmer and not Hobbes was the main antagonist of Locke.**
⊕ **Locke is an individualist out and out'. Substantiate this statement. (2012)**
⊕ **Comment on: "The great and chief aim of men uniting into a Commonwealth and putting themselves under Government is the preservation of property." (Locke) (2008)**
⊕ **Comment on: The end of law is not an abolition or restrain but to preserve and enlarge freedom (Locke). (2004)**
⊕ **Comment on: The reason why men enter into civil society is the preservation of their property (Locke). (2003)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions examine **Locke's Social Contract,** emphasizing his belief in **individual rights** and the **preservation of property** as the primary goal of **civil society** and government. Locke's emphasis on **property** as central to his philosophy is reflected in his assertion that the purpose of government is to preserve and enlarge freedom. The critique of Locke as an **individualist** underscores his focus on personal liberty and autonomy. Locke's social contract theory contrasts with Hobbes' more authoritarian views, and Laslett's assertion that **Filmer** was Locke's primary antagonist highlights the ideological battle over **sovereignty** and **natural rights.**

Introduction

John Locke, born in 1632, played a pivotal role in the transformative Revolution of 1688 in England. He is **widely recognized as the pioneer of Empiricism, a philosophical standpoint that asserts sense experience as the sole foundation of knowledge.**

John Locke is celebrated as **the originator of Liberalism and his political philosophy represents a significant milestone in the history of political literature.** His contributions to the **theory of Natural Rights, the concept of Separation of Powers, and the promotion of toleration** are highly influential in the realm of liberalism. Locke's approach focused on specific details rather than abstract concepts.

KEY FACTS…

Major Works: Two Treatises of Government (1689), An Essay Concerning Human Understanding (1690), Some Thoughts Concerning Education (1693)

Key Ideas: Natural Rights, State of Nature, Social Contract, Tabula Rasa, Separation of Powers

Major Critics: Thomas Hobbes, Jean-Jacques Rousseau, Karl Marx, Friedrich Hayek, Immanuel Kant

Background

English philosopher and physician, born in 1632, considered as one of the most influential Enlightenment thinkers.

Key ideas: social contract, theory of natural rights, limited government, tabula-rasa, toleration and religious freedom

Major Works:

"Two Treatises of Government" (1689): Presented his political theories, including natural rights, social contract, and limited government,

"An Essay Concerning Human Understanding" (1689): Explored the nature of human knowledge, perception, and understanding

151

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Influences:

▷ Influenced the development of liberal democratic ideals and the concept of individual rights

▷ His ideas on government and property rights heavily influenced the American Founding Fathers, particularly the drafting of the United States Constitution

▷ Played a significant role in shaping modern democratic theory and political philosophy

His emphasis on empiricism and the importance of experience influenced subsequent philosophers, psychologists, and educational theorists

'State of Nature' in Locke

State of Nature: In Locke's framework, the state of nature precedes political society but is not pre-social, as humans are inherently social. It is characterized by "peace, goodwill, mutual assistance, and self-preservation," rather than chaos or conflict.

Inherent Rights: Individuals in the state of nature hold inherent rights to life, liberty, and property, grounded in the Law of Nature, which reflects divine reason. These rights entail a moral obligation to preserve oneself and humanity, provided it does not compromise one's own survival.

Freedom and Equality: In this condition, people are free and equal without a governing authority. Each person acts as their own judge, where liberty is respected but not absolute. Individuals may not harm themselves or others unless it serves a higher purpose beyond self-preservation.

Why did Social Contract Emerge?

▷ **Inadequacies of the State of Nature:** In the state of nature, individuals are their own judges and possess the power to enforce punishments for violations of natural law. This system, however, is flawed due to:

  ▸ **Lack of Established Law:** No universally recognized laws to determine right from wrong.

  ▸ **Absence of Impartial Judges:** No neutral authority to resolve disputes.

  ▸ **Deficiency in Law Enforcement:** Insufficient power to enforce laws effectively.

▷ **Need for a Superior System** These shortcomings reveal the need for a more effective system. Although not a state of war, the state of nature is fraught with inconveniences and is not an ideal condition.

▷ **Threats of Conflict** The self-interested nature of individuals can lead to conflicts and uncertainties, risking a state of war. This jeopardizes the prospect of peace in the state of nature.

▷ **Purpose of the Social Contract** To address these issues, the social contract aims to establish organized laws and impartial governing institutions, replacing the unpredictability of the state of nature with stability and predictability.

▷ **Formation of Government** While society is formed through a contractual agreement, government is established through the delegation of trust and fiduciary responsibility, ensuring effective governance and law enforcement.

The social contract addresses the limitations of the state of nature by replacing individual self-judgment with a structured system of laws and impartial governance. It ensures stability and fairness, enhancing societal order and security through delegated power and trust.

Locke's Idea of Consent

▷ **Role of Consent in Locke's Philosophy:** Locke emphasizes consent as fundamental to forming political societies. In the state of nature, without established authority to create laws or resolve disputes, consent is key to joining and participating in political societies.

▷ **Membership through Explicit Consent:** Full membership in society is acquired through explicit consent. While general obligations exist under the law of nature, specific obligations arise only from voluntary agreement.

▷ **Objection and Tacit Consent:** Scholars debate Locke's theory due to the perceived lack of actual consent to governments. Locke addresses this with the doctrine of tacit consent: residing within a country or traveling across its borders implies consent to its laws and authority.

▷ **Obligation for Resident Aliens:** Locke argues that resident aliens implicitly consent to obey local laws by living in a country. Property inheritance further strengthens this bond, as it signifies permanent jurisdiction under the commonwealth.

Locke's Social Contract Theory

▷ Unlike Hobbes, Locke's social contract theory involves **two distinct** contracts.

  ▸ **First Contract:** Locke's social contract theory involves two agreements. The first contract forms civil society through unanimous consent, transferring the right to punish lawbreakers to an impartial authority. Once civil society is established, majority rule governs decisions, reflecting the community's will. Individuals unite and agree to follow the majority opinion.

  ▸ **The second contract:** It establishes a government or legislative body tasked with enforcing natural law. This government, as the "supreme" authority, operates with fiduciary powers and can be removed or altered by the people if it fails to fulfil its trust.

▷ **Trust and Authority:** The relationship between society and government is based on trust. The government, not part of the original contract, operates independently with authority granted by the people. This structure emphasizes the government's fiduciary role.

▷ **State of Nature and Government:** Locke views the state of nature as a state where individuals are free and equal but bound by natural law to respect each other's rights. People create a commonwealth to resolve conflicts and protect rights. Obedience to government depends on its protection of natural rights, including private property. If the government fails to uphold these rights, it may be overthrown.

Conception of State in Locke: Key Features

John Locke asserts that the state exists for the benefit of the individuals who form it. The state's primary purpose is to serve the welfare of the community, emphasizing that it is a human creation designed to meet the needs of its citizens. Locke rejects the idea of attributing a mystical or independent good to the state beyond the lives of its people.

Consent and Legitimacy: A legitimate state, according to Locke, must be founded on the consent of the governed. This requires a constitutional framework where individuals acknowledge and adhere to the rule of law. Political liberty depends on the establishment of standing laws that are known and accessible, as opposed to arbitrary decrees.

Limitations of State Authority: Locke argues that the authority of the state is limited and derived from the people. The state operates within a framework of trust, holding power on behalf of its citizens. It must exist for their well-being, rely on their consent, and be subject to constitutional limitations.

State's Role and Tolerance: Locke's conception of the state is one of tolerance and respect for individual differences. It is a negative state that does not aim to shape the character of its citizens or control their lives. Instead, the state aligns individual selfish interests with the public good, promoting overall societal welfare.

Theory of Natural Rights and Property

According to Locke, individuals in the state of nature have natural rights, including the rights to life, liberty, and property.

▷ **Basis of Rights:** These rights are based on human reason and the need for self-preservation. The right to property extends to a person's own body and the goods acquired through their labour necessary for self-preservation.

▷ **Freedom in the State of Nature:** In the state of nature, individuals have the freedom to dispose of their possessions as they see fit, as long as they do not harm themselves or others.

▷ **Inherent Property Rights:** Property rights are inherent and pre-exist the establishment of government. No government can take away an individual's property without consent. The government's role is to protect people's lives, possessions, and the right to accumulate private property.

▷ **Property Acquisition:** In the state of nature, property is held in common until individuals mix their labour with it, at which point it becomes their private property.

Macpherson Argued that Locke's views on property made him a bourgeois apologist, a defender of the privileges of the possessing classes.

153

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Locke as an Individualist

Locke in his writing displays himself as a radical individualist. He explained inalienable natural rights of the individual which can't be removed by the state. **According to Vaughan** *"Everything in Locke's system revolves around the individual."*

Locke gives utmost significance to the natural right of life, liberty and property. The State was created for the protection of natural rights and happiness of the individual.

Concept of Limited Government in Locke

Foundation of Government: John Locke advocates for a **state with limited sovereignty, opposing political absolutism.** He asserts that a legitimate state is created by the people, governed by a constitution and the rule of law, and its powers are derived from and held in trust by the people.

Limits on Government Power: Unlike Hobbes, Locke rejects absolute and indivisible sovereignty. He supports a government with divided powers and specific limitations:

▷ **Public Interest:** The government cannot command actions against the public interest.

▷ **Natural Rights:** It must not violate individuals' inherent natural rights.

▷ **Arbitrary Governance:** The government cannot rule arbitrarily or impose taxes without consent.

▷ **Alignment with Natural Law:** Laws must be consistent with natural law and divine principles.

▷ **Obedience:** A government exceeding these limits forfeits its legitimacy and does not deserve obedience.

▷ **Democratic Principles:** Locke emphasizes the role of democracy in limiting government power:

  ▸ **Consent of the Governed:** The government must be based on the consent of the people, with representatives directly elected to ensure this consent.

▷ **Electoral Accountability:** Elected representatives must retain popular support to stay in office, encouraging adherence to legal boundaries.

▷ **Legislative Limitations:** Locke advocates for restricting legislative power to prevent overreach:

  ▸ **Frequency of Sessions:** Limiting the duration and frequency of legislative sessions reduces the burden on people and prevents excessive and potentially harmful legislation.

Thus, Locke's theory promotes limited sovereignty, the rejection of legal absolutism in favour of popular sovereignty, and democratic principles as constraints on government power. His approach includes limiting legislative sessions to safeguard against overregulation.

Separation of Power in Locke

▷ **Legislative Power:** Locke views legislative power as the supreme authority, responsible for determining how the commonwealth's resources are utilized.

▷ **Executive Power:** The executive power enforces laws in specific cases.

▷ **Federative Power:** Locke introduces the federative power, which deals with international actions and natural law violations, allowing countries to punish breaches to protect citizens' rights.

▷ **Powers vs. Institutions:** Distinction Powers are functions like making or enforcing laws. Institutions may share the same power; for example, Locke's time saw legislative power shared among the House of Commons, the House of Lords, and the King. The executive and federative powers are often vested in the executive, indicating no direct one-to-one correspondence between powers and institutions.

▷ **Comparison with Montesquieu:** Alignment Montesquieu's division into legislative, executive, and judicial powers aligns with Locke's concepts. Montesquieu also emphasizes the superiority of legislative power, associates executive power with international affairs (similar to Locke's federative power), and regards judicial power for domestic law execution (akin to Locke's executive power).

▷ **Locke's Views on Constitutional Design:** Mixed Constitutions Locke supports legislative assemblies including elected representatives but allows for monarchical and aristocratic elements. He advocates for "mixed" constitutions incorporating various elements.

Locke's theory **does not prescribe a specific constitution type** or exclude unelected officials from legislative power. His primary concern is ensuring **adequate representation** to prevent liberty infringements and unjust taxation, with the

154

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

community retaining ultimate authority to "remove or alter" the legislative power as needed.

Conclusion

Locke advocates for a legitimate government based on the separation of powers. The legislative power holds ultimate authority, while the executive power enforces the law, and the federative power governs international actions. Powers can be shared among multiple institutions, and the people have the freedom to create mixed constitutions that combine different elements of governance. Montesquieu's later ideas align with Locke's formulation, emphasizing the legislative power's superiority and describing the executive and judicial powers in similar terms.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **John Locke** laid the foundation for liberalism. His political philosophy, emphasizing **natural rights, social contract, and limited government,** remains influential in shaping modern **democratic governance** and **individual liberties.**

▷ **Locke's theories** on **natural rights,** the **social contract,** and **separation of powers** helped form the backbone of **modern liberalism.** His ideas on **property rights** and **democracy** continue to shape contemporary political discourse globally.

Interlinkages

▷ **Locke's Social Contract and Hobbes' Views on Sovereignty:** Locke's concept of the **social contract** contrasts sharply with **Hobbes' absolute sovereignty.** Unlike Hobbes, Locke's government derives power from **popular consent,** ensuring **natural rights**. This comparison highlights Locke's more **democratic** approach to governance.

▷ **Locke's Theory of Natural Rights and Marxist Critique:** Locke's emphasis on **property rights** and individual freedom in the **state of nature** can be compared with **Marxist** views, which critique the concept of private property. Locke's theory of **individual ownership** is essential in understanding **capitalism** in political theory.

▷ **Locke's Concept of Limited Government and Montesquieu's Separation of Powers:** Locke's **limited government** and **separation of powers** align with **Montesquieu's** ideas, where the **executive, legislative, and judicial** branches of government must be separate. Both thinkers advocate for **checks and balances** within the political system to prevent abuse of power.

▷ **Locke's Concept of Toleration and Gandhi's Concept of Satyagraha:** Locke's idea of **religious tolerance** and freedom of conscience has parallels with **Gandhi's concept of satyagraha,** which emphasizes the **right to dissent** peacefully. Both philosophers argue for a **society** that respects individual **freedoms** and **diversity**.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Locke's Natural Rights and Modern Human Rights:** Locke's theory of **life, liberty, and property** as **natural rights** laid the foundation for modern **human rights** movements. These ideas are central to **international human rights law,** ensuring individual protection and **personal freedoms** in democratic societies globally.

▷ **Locke's Limited Government and Contemporary Democracy:** Locke's advocacy for **limited government** resonates with modern democratic systems that emphasize **checks and balances**. His idea that government power must be derived from **popular consent** is seen in the **electoral systems** of democracies today, ensuring **accountability.**

▷ **Locke's Influence on the U.S. Constitution:** Locke's **social contract theory** and emphasis on **property rights** significantly influenced the **American Revolution** and the drafting of the **U.S. Constitution.** His ideas on **consent of the governed** and the **right to revolt** against unjust rulers are evident in the **Declaration of Independence.**

▷ **Locke's Religious Toleration and Modern Secularism:** Locke's advocacy for **religious tolerance** laid the groundwork for modern **secularism**, which ensures that **freedom of religion** is protected in countries worldwide. This principle remains crucial in **democratic nations,** ensuring that the government does not interfere in religious practices.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ **Locke's political philosophy,** with its emphasis on **individual rights** and **limited government,** offers enduring insights into the **structure of democracy.** His focus on **consent of the governed** remains central to modern **constitutional theory.**

▷ Locke's concept of the **social contract** and **natural rights** laid the groundwork for **individual liberty** and **democracy**. His influence continues to shape political systems that prioritize **citizen rights** and **accountable governance.**

JOHN STUART MILL

> *"A person may cause evil to others not only by his actions but by his inaction, and in either case he is justly accountable to them for the injury."* - **JS MILL (On Liberty)**

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

- ⊕ **"The legal subordination of one señ to another is wrong in itself, and now one of the chief hindrances to human development. (J. S. Mill). Comment.(2023)**
- ⊕ **J.S.Mill's ideas on women suffrage. Comment (2021)**
- ⊕ **John Stuart Mill is a 'reluctant democrat". - C. L. Wayper.(2018)**
- ⊕ **Comment on: "All silencing of discussion is an assumption of infallibility." (J.S. Mill) (2014)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions explore **J.S. Mill's** views on **gender equality,** particularly his assertion that the **legal subordination of one sex to another** hinders **human development.** Mill's support for **women's suffrage** reflects his commitment to **individual liberty** and **equality**. The critique of Mill as a **"reluctant democrat"** by **C. L. Wayper** emphasizes his cautious approach to **democracy** despite advocating for personal freedoms. Mill's belief in the **importance of free speech** is evident in his statement that **silencing discussion** assumes **infallibility**, highlighting his commitment to open dialogue and intellectual freedom.

Introduction

John Stuart Mill (1806-1873) was a highly influential political philosopher in the 19th century. His political theories marked a shift in liberalism, moving from a hands-off approach by the state to a more active role, redefining liberty from a negative to a positive concept, and recognizing the importance of social interconnectedness in individuality.

While Mill was a **liberal**, he could also be regarded, at the same time, as a **reluctant democrat,** a **pluralist,** a **cooperative socialist,** an **elitist** and a **feminist**.

He also *replaced the quantitative approach of Bentham by a qualitative one.*

KEY FACTS...

Major Works: "On Liberty," "Utilitarianism," "The Subjection of Women".

Key Ideas: Utilitarianism, Harm Principle, Liberty, Representative Government.

Influences: Jeremy Bentham, David Ricardo, William Wordsworth.

Contribution: Advocated for individual liberty, free speech, and the principle of utility for societal decision-making. Criticized social and political oppression, championed women's rights, and called for representative government.

Bentham as Father of Utilitarianism

Utilitarianism, as defined by **Jeremy Bentham,** is a moral philosophy that evaluates the rightness or wrongness of actions based on their consequences. Bentham's definition can be summarized as follows:

"Utilitarianism is the doctrine that the best action is the one that maximizes overall happiness or pleasure and minimizes overall pain or suffering for the greatest number of people. This principle of utility suggests that the moral value of an action is determined by its ability to produce the greatest net benefit or the highest sum of pleasure over pain."

Hedonistic Calculus: Bentham introduced a hedonistic calculus to evaluate actions by measuring their intensity, duration, certainty, and extent of pleasure or pain. This method aims to quantify these factors to determine the moral value or utility of different actions.

Impartiality and Consequentialism: Utilitarianism emphasizes impartiality and the universal application of moral principles. It adopts a consequentialist approach, focusing on the outcomes of actions rather than the intentions behind them.

156

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Objective: The goal of Bentham's Utilitarianism is to guide ethical decision-making towards the pursuit of happiness and the avoidance of suffering, ultimately striving for a more just and harmonious society.

Thus, Bentham's utilitarianism focuses on quantifying the effects of actions to determine their ethical value, with the ultimate goal of enhancing collective well-being.

Bentham as Father of Utilitarianism

Mill retained the foundational principle of Utilitarianism but introduced significant modifications:

▷ **Higher and Lower Pleasures:** He **distinguished between higher and lower pleasures,** considering intellectual and moral pleasures as superior to physical ones.

▷ **Expansion of Utilitarianism:** Mill **expanded the scope of Utilitarianism by incorporating factors such as moral motives,** sociability, universal altruism, sympathy, and a redefined concept of justice that emphasized impartiality.

▷ **Happiness and Human Dignity:** Rather than focusing solely on pleasure, Mill made happiness and human dignity the ultimate goals of life. Happiness, for Mill, encompassed the development of moral virtues, the pursuit of lofty aspirations, self-control over desires, and recognition of individual and collective interests.

▷ **Quality of Pleasures:** While Bentham saw pleasure as equal in quality for all individuals, Mill emphasized that both pleasure and people differ in terms of quality. He famously stated that it is better to be a dissatisfied human being than a satisfied pig and better to be a dissatisfied Socrates than a satisfied fool.

According to **Bentham**, pleasure and people don't differ in quality. Hence, utilitarianism for Bentham was more of a **Quantitative term** —as he exclaimed "Pushpin as good as poetry". However, **Mill added the element of quality as for him, both pleasure and people differ in terms of quality.**

It is better to be a human being dissatisfied than a pig satisfied, it is better to be Socrates dissatisfied than a fool satisfied.

Mill's Idea on Liberty

Mill classified **liberty** into **3 parts**

▷ The liberty of thought and expression,

▷ The liberty of action

▷ Liberty of association

A. Liberty of Action

Justification for Interference: John Stuart Mill's principle states that society can only interfere with an individual's freedom when necessary for self-protection. Such interference is only justified to prevent harm to others, not for the individual's own well-being.

Self-Regarding vs. Other-Regarding Actions: Mill differentiates between **self-regarding actions,** which concern only the individual, and **other-regarding actions,** which impact others. Individuals should be free to act in self-regarding matters without state interference. However, the state may intervene in other-regarding actions to prevent harm to others, a concept known as the **"Harm Principle."**

Challenges in Distinguishing Actions: Mill notes the difficulty in clearly separating self-regarding from other-regarding actions. For instance, destroying one's property might affect others or set a harmful example. Interference is only justified when there are direct obligations to others, not merely due to potential indirect effects.

Limits of State Intervention: Mill asserts that state intervention should focus on direct obligations rather than potential societal influence. The principle upholds individual liberty while addressing genuine harm to others.

B. Liberty of Association

Justification for Interference: John Stuart Mill's principle states that society can only interfere with an individual's freedom when necessary for self-protection. Such interference is only justified to prevent harm to others, not for the individual's own well-being.

Self-Regarding vs. Other-Regarding Actions: Mill differentiates between **self-regarding actions,** which concern only the individual, and **other-regarding actions,** which impact others. Individuals should be free to act in self-regarding matters

without state interference. However, the state may intervene in other-regarding actions to prevent harm to others, a concept known as the **"Harm Principle."**

Challenges in Distinguishing Actions: Mill notes the difficulty in clearly separating self-regarding from other-regarding actions. For instance, destroying one's property might affect others or set a harmful example. Interference is only justified when there are direct obligations to others, not merely due to potential indirect effects.

Limits of State Intervention: Mill asserts that state intervention should focus on direct obligations rather than potential societal influence. The principle upholds individual liberty while addressing genuine harm to others.

C. Liberty of Thought and Expression

Value of Liberty: Mill saw liberty as inherently valuable for fostering compassionate, civilized, and morally upright individuals. He emphasized that it benefits both society and individuals.

Threats to Liberty: The primary threat to individual liberty came from the tyranny and intolerance of the majority, especially through extreme egalitarianism and social conformity. Mill argued for limits on collective opinion's interference with individual independence.

Importance of Individuality: Mill championed individuality, seeing it as critical inquiry, responsible thought, self-development, and free will. He valued questioning norms and encouraging eccentricity against mass opinion.

Liberty of Expression: Mill argued that suppressing dissent deprived humanity of valuable knowledge and hindered the strengthening of correct views. He believed freedom of expression was essential for the clash between truth and error.

Role of Education and Happiness: Mill emphasized education, intellectual training, critical thinking, and character cultivation. He believed happiness resided in discovering and developing one's innate powers, exercising autonomous thought and action, equating happiness with liberty and individuality.

Limits to Liberty

Mill applied the principle of liberty mainly to mature individuals, excluding:

- **Children:** Due to their lack of maturity.
- Invalids and the Mentally Handicapped: Considered incapable of exercising liberty effectively.
- **"Non-Age" or Barbaric Societies:** Viewed as lacking the maturity for full liberty, with race seen as a hindrance to development.
- **Educational Deficiencies:** Liberty could be restricted where individuals lacked proper education.

▷ **Liberty and Civilization**
- **Advanced Civilizations:** Mill associated liberty with higher, more developed societies.
- **Lower Civilizations:** Suggested despotism or paternalism with strict limitations for societies deemed less advanced.

▷ **Liberty vs. State Strength**
- **Warning Against Sacrifice:** Mill cautioned that infringing upon liberty to strengthen the state could be counterproductive.
- **Individual and State:** Recognized that states are composed of individuals and that excessive state control could be oppressive.
- **Society's Power:** Mill sought to protect the individual's private sphere from both government and societal oppression.

"All Silencing of Discussion is Assumption of Infallibility"- JS Mill

Advocacy of Free Speech: Mill views speech as a divine gift, essential for democracy and distinguishing humans from other species.

Purpose of Free Dialogue: Mill argues that the purpose of human life is to seek truth, with free dialogue being crucial for this pursuit. Emphasizes the importance of hearing dissenting voices, even those considered "mad," as truth can emerge from unexpected sources.

Rejection of Oppression

▷ **Tyranny of the Majority and Individual:** Mill rejects tyranny of both, asserting that silencing opinions deprives humanity of potential truths.

158

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGULURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

▷ **Clash of Ideas:** Believes that truth results from the confrontation of opposing ideas, not from suppression.

Importance in Democracy

▷ **Diverse Opinions:** In democracies, diverse opinions lead to discovering truth and reconciling differing perspectives.

▷ **Risk of Suppression:** Suppressing ideas, even those initially deemed false, risks losing valuable knowledge and implies an assumption of infallibility.

Criticism

Ambiguities in Mill's Theory: Mill was inconsistent in specifying the proper limits of legislation. While he supported compulsory education and regulations for public welfare, he opposed prohibition as an intrusion on liberty.

Critique by Sir Ernest Barker: Sir Ernest Barker criticized Mill for advocating an abstract form of individual liberty that may be impractical or insufficient in addressing real-world issues.

Evolution of Liberty Concept

▷ **Departure from Absolutism:** Mill's writings on liberty moved away from absolutist notions, recognizing the interdependence of individual actions.

▷ **Impact on Others:** Mill acknowledged that no behavior is purely self-regarding; every action affects others, challenging the clear distinction between self-regarding and other-regarding actions.

▷ **Bosanquet's View:** Bosanquet supported this perspective, emphasizing that individual actions inevitably have broader consequences.

JS Mill as Feminist

The **Subjection of Women (1869)** begins with the revolutionary statement, "the principle which regulates the existing social relations between the two sexes-the legal subordination of one sex to the other is wrong in itself, and now one of the chief hindrances to human improvement; and it ought to be replaced by a principle of perfect equality".

Oppressive Marriage Laws: Mill highlights the discriminatory legal conditions in 19th-century England, including the denial of property rights to married women, exclusive guardianship of children by fathers, and the disregard of marital rape.

Paradoxes and Critiques

▷ **Inequality Despite Progress:** Mill finds it paradoxical that while liberty and equality are expanding in other areas, women remain oppressed. He seeks to challenge arguments for women's subordination and push for gender equality.

▷ **Historical Justifications:** He disputes the justification of women's inequality based on historical practices, noting that other oppressive systems, like slavery, have been rejected.

Advocacy for Equal Rights

▷ **Areas of Focus:** Mill advocates for women's suffrage, education, and employment opportunities, viewing these as essential for societal progress.

▷ **Equality as a Right:** He argues that women's status is worse than that of slaves due to chronic coercion and lacks legal equality.

Intellectual and Social Capabilities: Mill asserts that women have the same intellectual capabilities as men. He challenges the notion that women should be limited to domestic roles, advocating for autonomy in choosing their own paths.

Critique of Gender Roles and Family Power

▷ **Family Dynamics:** Mill criticizes the concentration of power in men within the family, leading to women's oppression. He questions the conventional separation of paternal and political power.

▷ **Economic Implications:** Mill attributes women's low wages to societal prejudices and barriers, arguing that removing these restrictions would benefit society by utilizing a broader pool of intellectual resources.

Mill believes that improving women's status is crucial not only for women but for the advancement of humanity. He advocates for equal opportunities to enhance both individual lives and societal progress.

159

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Mills's Ideas on Rpresentative Government

Mill viewed democracy as essential for achieving liberty in thought, expression, and action, which fosters personal development and enrichment.

Arguments Against Interfering with Freedom of Thought

▷ **Possibility of Truth Suppression:** Suppressing an opinion may prevent the emergence of a true opinion.

▷ **Partial Truth in Errors:** Even erroneous opinions may contain elements of truth that contribute to understanding.

▷ **Understanding True Opinions:** Suppressing false opinions hinders understanding the rationale behind true opinions and undermines the process of strengthening them.

▷ **Emergence of Truth:** The clash of opposing opinions allows remaining truths to emerge.

Limits to Individuality

▷ **Individuality vs. Harm:** Mill's concern for individuality is balanced by the need to avoid harm to others and maintain harmony.

▷ **Negative Liberty:** Individuality should not disrupt social good; restraints are justified when actions affect the common good beyond personal interests.

Mill championed democracy and individual liberty as essential for personal and societal growth. While he valued individuality, he acknowledged that personal freedom must be balanced with the welfare of others and societal harmony, allowing for constraints only when individual actions impact the common good.

Relating Democracy with Representative Government

John Stuart Mill's vision of representative democracy is integral to his broader philosophy of liberty and individual development. He argued that democracy not only allows citizens to fully utilize their capabilities but also fosters virtue and intelligence, essential for both personal and societal advancement.

▷ **Representative Democracy and Progress:** Mill saw representative democracy as essential for progress, enabling citizens to develop their abilities, foster virtue, intelligence, and excellence, and make collective decisions effectively.

▷ **Reconciliation of Equality and Freedom:** Mill aimed to balance political equality with individual freedom. He believed that all citizens should be equal, with popular sovereignty giving legitimacy to the government.

▷ **Conditions for Effective Government:** Mill outlined conditions for a functioning representative government: active, self-reliant citizens; a commitment to democratic institutions; and safeguarding individual rights against majority tyranny.

▷ **Franchise and Voting Rights:** He supported equal voting rights but proposed adjusting the franchise to include literacy and basic skills as prerequisites. While advocating universal suffrage, Mill emphasized the importance of ensuring that voters have the character and ability to contribute to the public good.

▷ **Importance of Political Participation:** Mill argued that political participation was crucial for developing reason, judgment, and moral maturity. He believed that involvement in governance and decision-making fosters community and belonging.

Mill's approach to representative democracy emphasizes the critical balance between political equality and individual freedom. By advocating for thoughtful enfranchisement and active participation, Mill aimed to enhance governance and nurture a community where individuals and society can thrive together.

Mill as Reluctant Democract (CL Wayper)

J.S. Mill is recognized as a transitional thinker who supported both direct democracy as an ideal and representative democracy as a practical form of government.

Conditions for Democracy: Mill expressed reservations about spreading democracy universally. He believed that democracy should be adopted only in societies that meet certain conditions, including the presence of a civic culture and a commitment to democratic principles.

Advocacy for Benevolent Despotism: Mill advocated benevolent despotism for colonies like India and China. He was concerned that expanding voting rights without the necessary conditions could lead to mobocracy and pave the way for authoritarian rule. This caution aligns with historical patterns where democracy, without constitutionalism, led to dictatorship or military rule.

Despite his concerns, Mill's scepticism was rooted in his strong belief in democratic governance. His reluctance reflected a profound commitment to both the theory and practice of democracy. While he emphasized the need for qualification in introducing democracy, Mill remains a prominent advocate of democracy and its fundamental values.

Conclusion

Mill's liberal philosophy was pivotal in advancing modern democratic equality, particularly through his advocacy for women's suffrage. As a Member of Parliament, he campaigned for women's rights and critiqued their oppression, despite limited progress. Mill was among the first male philosophers to address gender subjugation and emphasized the need to protect individuality and privacy from collective intrusion.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **John Stuart Mill** was a central figure in 19th-century political philosophy. He reshaped liberal thought by emphasizing **individual liberty, democratic governance,** and **utilitarianism**. His contributions to **women's rights** and **freedom of speech** continue to influence modern political theory.

▷ **John Stuart Mill's** philosophy blends **liberty** with **utilitarianism**. It advocates for **individual rights** and **democratic participation**. His ideas on **freedom of expression** and **women's rights** remain integral to discussions on **modern political freedom** and **social justice.**

Interlinkages

▷ **John Stuart Mill's** ideas on **liberty** and **democracy** align with **liberal political philosophy.** His contributions to **individual rights** and the **harm principle** form a foundation for modern liberal political theory, shaping discussions on **freedom of speech** and **state intervention.**

▷ Mill's concept of **representative democracy** connects to **democratic theory.** His emphasis on **active political participation** and the **role of informed** citizens ties into modern views on democratic governance and highlights the importance of **civic engagement** for effective **policy-making.**

▷ Mill's advocacy for **women's rights** in **The Subjection of Women** directly connects with **feminist political theory.** His early arguments for **gender equality** influenced **liberal feminism** and still impact discussions on **women's suffrage, education**, and **employment** in the modern era.

▷ Mill's **utilitarianism** links to **policy formulation** and **ethical decision-making.** His emphasis on the **greatest happiness** principle informs modern discussions on public policy, especially in areas like **healthcare**, **economics**, and **social justice,** which rely on maximizing societal welfare.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ Mill's **Harm Principle** remains crucial in debates on **freedom of expression.** For instance, in the context of **hate speech** regulation and **online censorship,** Mill's framework guides discussions on when government intervention is justified to **prevent harm** to others while protecting **free speech.**

▷ **Mill's feminist ideas** continue to inspire global movements advocating for **women's rights.** His call for **gender equality, education,** and **political participation** is reflected in contemporary struggles for **equal pay, reproductive rights,** and **gender inclusivity** in leadership positions worldwide.

▷ Mill's emphasis on **representative government** influences **democratic participation** today. His thoughts on **informed citizens** and **electoral accountability** are reflected in the increasing push for **electoral reforms, voter education**, and **campaign finance transparency,** ensuring **democratic integrity** in modern politics.

▷ Mill's philosophy of **individual liberty** and **privacy rights** is especially relevant in the age of **government surveillance**. His work on **privacy** and **government interference** resonates in debates about **data privacy, social media regulation,** and the **limits of state power** in modern society.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ **Mill's** vision of **individual liberty** and **democracy** shaped contemporary political frameworks. His **utilitarian** approach and advocacy for **women's rights** continue to inspire efforts towards **gender equality** and **inclusive governance** in modern democracies.

▷ **John Stuart Mill's** emphasis on **personal liberty**, **gender equality**, and **democratic engagement** made him a transformative thinker. His work on **free speech** and **individual rights** remains foundational for understanding **modern democratic ideals**.

161

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

ANTONIO GRAMSCI

> *"The old world is dying, and the new world struggles to be born: now is the time of monsters."*
>
> *- Antonio Gramsci (Prison Notebooks)*

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

▷ **Critically examine Gramsci's concept of Hegemony. (2008)**
▷ **Explain, as per Gramsci, the distinction between hegemony and domination. (2013)**
▷ **Discuss Gramsci's notion of 'organic intellectuals. (2015)**
▷ **Comment on: Gramsci's concept of Hegemony. (2016)**
▷ **According to Gramsci, hegemony is primarily based on the organization of consent.' Comment. (2019)**

Insights from PYQs

The themes in the questions focus on **Gramsci's concept of hegemony**, the **distinction between hegemony and domination**, the role of **organic intellectuals**, and how **hegemony is based on the organization of consent** rather than coercion or force.

Introduction

▷ **Prominent Figure**: Antonio Francesco Gramsci, an influential Italian Marxist and social philosopher, was a key figure in 20th-century Marxist thought.

▷ **Imprisonment**: Imprisoned by Mussolini's fascist regime in 1926 due to his leadership in the Communist Party.

▷ **Prison Writings**: During his imprisonment, produced over 30 notebooks and approximately 3,000 pages of historical analysis and political commentary.

▷ **Prison Notebooks**: Highly regarded as a significant contribution to 20th-century political theory.

KEY FACTS...

Major Works: Prison Notebooks (written between 1929-1935), The Modern Prince (written in 1932), Selections from the Prison Notebooks (1971)

Key Ideas: Cultural Hegemony, Passive Revolution, Organic Intellectuals, War of Position

Major Critics: Louis Althusser, Antonio Negri, Michel Foucault, Nicos Poulantzas, Herbert Marcuse

▷ **Inspirations**: Drew inspiration from fellow Marxist theorists and thinkers such as Machiavelli, Pareto, Sorel, and Croce.

▷ **Cultural Hegemony**: Developed a theoretical framework explaining how ruling powers use cultural institutions to maintain dominance in capitalist societies.

▷ **Superstructure and Class Relationships:** Argued the superstructure (cultural and ideological institutions) upholds class relationships. State and civil society employ mechanisms of hegemony to reinforce dominance.

▷ **Counter-Hegemony:** Advocated for developing counter hegemony to challenge ruling powers.

Gramsci's Similarities and Differences with Marx

According to Marxist theory, the mode of production shapes society, with all aspects derived from the economic base. Gramsci emphasized the significance of the superstructure, including cultural and ideological elements, in driving social change.

▷ **Ideas and Ideology as Class Consciousness:** Unlike Marx, Gramsci recognized the importance of **ideas** and **ideology**, considering them forms of class consciousness and integrating Hegelian idealism into his interpretation of Marxism.

▷ **Rejection of Economic Determinism:** Gramsci rejected economic determinism, emphasizing the role of cultural factors in historical analysis, influenced by **Benedetto Croce**.

▷ **Interplay of Economic Base and Superstructure:** He acknowledged the independent role of consciousness and offered a

theory of history that highlighted the interplay between the economic base and the superstructure components.

▷ **Reciprocal Relationship:** Gramsci argued for a reciprocal relationship between the economic base and the superstructure, suggesting that cultural elements like law, culture, language, religion, and tradition could impact and transform the economic base.

▷ **Unity of Economic Base and Superstructure:** In contrast to classical Marxian tradition, Gramsci advocated for the unity of the economic base and the superstructure, recognizing the influence of culture, ideologies, and moral principles in shaping society.

▷ **Bourgeois Hegemony:** Gramsci emphasized the role of bourgeois hegemony in controlling society, extending beyond materialistic considerations to encompass cultural aspects.

Marx	Gramsci
▷ Marxist theory focuses on the coercive practices employed by the ruling class to exploit the proletariat through force. ▷ Society is divided by Marx into two main components: the base, which encompasses the economic structure, and the superstructure, comprising socializing mechanisms such as language, religion, education, law, ideology, mass media, and the military. ▷ According to Marx, the economic base of society determines its social, political, and cultural environment. ▷ He asserts that the economic relations within society form the foundation on which a legal and political superstructure is built, shaping specific forms of social consciousness. ▷ Marx argues that since the ruling class owns and controls the means of production, they also dominate intellectual and cultural production. Consequently, the ideas propagated by the ruling class become the prevailing ideas in society. Thus, for the working-class revolution to succeed, there must be a fundamental transformation of the economic base. Marx contends that the economic base determines the social status of individuals, implying that if the working class aims to become the dominant class in society, it must seize control of the economic base. In essence, revolution becomes possible only when there is a profound change in the economic foundation.	▷ Gramsci **places significant emphasis on the role of ideology and the superstructure in his analysis**. According to him, the ruling class strives for hegemony, seeking to establish its rule as acceptable to all classes before resorting to direct force and coercion. ▷ G**ramsci challenges** the **Marxist notion that the power of the ruling class is confined to the economic base alone.** Instead, he argues that a class becomes hegemonic not only through controlling the means of production and exerting coercion, but also by gaining consent from other classes. ▷ Unlike Marx's preoccupation with the economic base, **Gramsci highlights the importance of ideology and ideas. He argues that as long as the ideas of the subordinate classes are dominated, the ruling class can maintain its rule without resorting to force and oppression.** ▷ Gramsci further expands on Marx's division of the state into the base and superstructure **by introducing the concepts of political society and civil society.** ▷ Political **society encompasses coercive institutions such as the government, armed forces, and legal system, while civil society includes non-coercive institutions involved in shaping public opinion, including libraries, schools, associations, and even architectural and urban elements.** Gramsci **suggests that the failure of socialist revolution in capitalist societies, contrary to Marx's predictions, can be attributed to the hegemony of the capitalist class.** As a result, **he proposes a two-stage approach to class struggle and revolution: the war of position and the war of manoeuvre.**

Bourgeoisie Instruments of Domination

Marx's theory of historical materialism asserts that the dominant class's power is solely rooted in economic control. He views the state as essentially an instrument of the bourgeoisie. In his "Force theory of class struggle," the ruling class maintains its dominance through coercion, instilling fear and employing punishment.

In contrast, **Gramsci presents a more nuanced perspective on how the ruling class maintains its power. He acknowledges that they employ various means such as force, economic influence, the formation of a historical bloc, and the consent of the governed. Gramsci specifically highlights two non-coercive methods:**

▷ **Hegemony:** This concept refers to the ruling class's ability to establish its rule by gaining the consent and acceptance of other social classes. It involves shaping the dominant ideology and cultural norms to align with the interests of the ruling class.

▷ **Historical bloc**: Gramsci emphasizes the importance of forging alliances and forming a cohesive bloc between different

social groups. This strategic coalition enables the ruling class to maintain its dominance by unifying diverse interests under its ideological and political leadership.

Overall, **Gramsci's analysis offers a more comprehensive understanding of power dynamics, highlighting the significance of consent, ideology, and coalition-building alongside coercion and economic control.**

Theory of Hegemony and the Role of Intellectuals

Gramsci's key contribution to Marxism lies in his concept of cultural hegemony, which explains how the ruling class maintains its domination over other classes.

▷ I**deology's Role in Power:** Gramsci argued that ideology, not just force, is crucial for the ruling class to maintain control.

▷ **Hegemony Explained:** Hegemony describes the ruling class's intellectual and moral leadership, achieved through consent rather than just force.

▷ **More Than Domination:** Hegemony goes beyond simple domination. It involves both subjugating opposing groups and gaining the support of allied groups through cultural influence.

Through hegemony, the ruling classes establish their worldview as common sense, ensuring compliance and suppressing revolutionary movements. It not only involves the imposition of a monolithic ideology but is also produced by various institutions such as schools and prisons. Workers internalize these ideologies, making the struggle against capitalism challenging as they may identify with and subscribe to the ideas of their exploiters.

Gramsci's shift in focus from political economy to the analysis of culture marks the beginning of "Cultural Marxism." Hegemony, according to Gramsci, goes beyond binary domination and represents a comprehensive understanding of power and attraction. It involves on-going negotiations, compromises, and transactions between the ruling and subaltern classes, resulting in a constant process of consensus-building and adaptation.

Gramsci **distinguishes between two types of hegemony.**

1. **In limited hegemony,** the dominant class fails to accommodate the interests of the subaltern class, making revolution more feasible and allowing workers to develop true consciousness.

2. **In expansive hegemony,** the dominant class accommodates the interests of the subaltern class, making revolution highly challenging and hindering the development of true consciousness among workers.

Overall, Gramsci's concept of hegemony highlights the complex interplay of power, consent, and ideology in maintaining class domination, expanding the understanding of Marxist theory beyond economic determinism

Gramsci's Analysis of Superstructure

Gramsci is recognized **as a theoretician of the superstructure** because he places significant emphasis on the role of the superstructure in the development of history and the distribution of power within society. **In contrast to Marx's economic determinism**, Gramsci attributes an autonomous role to the superstructure.

Gramsci identifies two levels of the superstructure:

▷ **Civil Society:** This level is closely connected to the economic base and serves as a source of legitimization. It encompasses various social institutions and practices that shape public opinion and values.

▷ **Political Society:** This level exercises overall control and represents the institutions responsible for coercion and governance. It includes the government, armed forces, legal systems, and other institutions that enforce laws and maintain social order.

In essence, **Gramsci's analysis recognizes the interplay between these two levels of the superstructure and their influence on social dynamics and power relations.**

How Civil Society Operates in Super-Structure?

Civil society occupies a position between the state and the economic structure. It functions as a private network that permeates all social organizations and plays a crucial role in disseminating and maintaining hegemony. Despite its outward appearance of neutrality, civil society is closely aligned with the economic base and serves as a significant arena for the operation of hegemonic power.

▷ **The primary objective of civil society is to generate consent and support for the capitalist class. Gramsci argues that both civil society and the state form the structures of domination in society.**

▷ **For capitalism to maintain its stability, it relies on the effectiveness of civil society institutions**. **These institutions act as a buffer, absorbing shocks and functioning as the first line of defense against revolutionary movements**. Consequently, Gramsci proposes engaging in a "war of position" to contest and transform civil society.

In summary, civil society occupies a crucial position in maintaining capitalist hegemony, and challenging its influence within civil society is a strategic approach in pursuing social change.

Gramsci's Idea of Revolution

Gramsci identifies the failure of the socialist revolution in capitalist societies, which contradicted Marx's predictions, as resulting from the dominant class's hegemonic control. In response, Gramsci proposes a two-stage strategy for revolutionary class struggle.

▷ The first stage is **the "war of position," which involves challenging the hegemony of the capitalist class within civil society.** This covert and gradual struggle aims to gain influence and power within key social institutions. It seeks to create an alternative social base for a new state by nurturing organic intellectuals and establishing supportive institutions.

▷ The second stage is **the "war of manoeuvre," which entails a direct confrontation with the political state.** *Gramsci argued that once the working class has developed revolutionary consciousness through the war of position, they can effectively overthrow the capitalist state and establish a communist system.*

It is crucial to recognize the interconnectedness of these two stages. In modern times, a direct confrontation with the state alone is insufficient to threaten the dominant class's position unless they continue to maintain their hegemonic control over civil society.

In summary, **Gramsci's proposed two-stage strategy for revolution acknowledges the significance of countering hegemony within civil society before engaging in a direct struggle against the political state.**

Gramsci's Idea of Intellectuals

Gramsci perceives intellectuals as individuals who perform organizational roles in various spheres of society, including the economy, politics, and culture.

▷ He argues that all individuals engage in intellectual pursuits outside of their professional activities, although they may not be intellectuals in terms of their social function.

▷ According **to Gramsci, intellectuals play a crucial role in creating, sustaining, and expanding the hegemony of the class they represent.** They go beyond merely expressing economic interests and are instrumental in articulating and disseminating the perspectives of their respective classes.

Gramsci's concept of intellectuals encompasses a wide range of social agents, including scholars, artists, and those in technical or leadership positions in society, such as administrators, bureaucrats, industrial managers, and politicians.

He classifies intellectuals into two categories: organic intellectuals and traditional intellectuals.

Organic Intellectuals

▷ Gramsci identifies **intellectuals as individuals who possess specific sociological characteristics and represent the interests of a particular class**. They are actively involved in both the production of ideas and the articulation of their class's aspirations, often developing counter-hegemonic narratives. For instance, Ambedkar is viewed as an organic intellectual for the Dalit community.

▷ **Organic intellectuals are seen as entrepreneurs and organizers within the masses. They play a crucial role in shaping new cultures and social classes, acting as spokespersons for the working class.** Gramsci considers organic intellectuals as a distinct "new class" that emerges alongside the rise of a new social class. These intellectuals are unique in that they give voice to those who lack representation and can inspire collective action for meaningful causes.

Due to their opposition to and displacement of established classes and their intellectuals, organic intellectuals can be viewed as revolutionary. Their significance lies in their ability to elaborate and disseminate organic ideology, making them essential agents in the struggle for social change.

Traditional Intellectuals

▷ **Gramsci identifies another class of intellectuals who do not belong to any specific social class but maintain historical continuity through customs and traditions**. Church fathers serve as an example of this type. These intellectuals, known as traditional intellectuals, are often closely associated with the petite bourgeoisie class, particularly in rural areas.

▷ **Traditional intellectuals fulfil a socio-political role by establishing an organic connection between the peasant classes and the state apparatus**. They may include priests, lawyers, teachers, doctors, and others who enjoy a different standard of living than the average peasants. Their presence serves as a source of inspiration for the peasant class to strive for improved standards of living.

▷ **Unlike organic intellectuals, traditional intellectuals are detached from the process of production and labour.** Instead, they focus on private spheres such as religion, ethics, and education. They may have an acknowledged or unacknowledged association with the ruling class of their time.

The role of traditional intellectuals is significant in understanding how hegemony operates. In order for an emerging class to successfully overthrow the ruling class, it becomes necessary for the traditional intellectuals to align themselves with the ideology of the emerging class. Their ideological shift plays a crucial part in the transformation of hegemonic power dynamics

Concept of Ideology and State

Ideological Epiphenomenalism: Epiphenomenalism argued that the economic infrastructure determined the ideological superstructure, suggesting ideology had no impact on economic life or revolutionary change. Gramsci revised this notion and argued that ideology is a structure in itself.

Source of Revolutionary Change: Gramsci argued that revolutionary change arose from tensions within the economic infrastructure, particularly the relations and forces of production and antagonistic classes.

Critique of Inevitability: Gramsci rejected the idea that capitalism would collapse solely due to economic laws, emphasizing the mutually exclusive class character of ideologies between the capitalist and working classes.

Redefining Ideology: He redefined ideology as practices, politico-ideological discourses, and elements, moving away from epiphenomenalism and class reductionism.

Organic Ideology: Gramsci introduced "organic ideology," a system of class rule or hegemony integrating various ideological elements into a unified system.

Hegemonic System: In a hegemonic system, the ruling class holds power through economic supremacy and articulates ideological discourses within civil society.

Diffusion Through Institutions: Organic ideology spreads through social institutions like the family, churches, media, schools, legal systems, trade unions, and economic associations, integrating diverse class interests into a cohesive structure.

Role of Organic Intellectuals: "Organic intellectuals" unify ideological elements from subordinate groups into a coherent system, establishing hegemony.

Gramsci's theory influenced critical theorists analysing **consumerism** and **materialism's** role in creating a **homogenized society**, which leads to a loss of revolutionary consciousness among workers and sustains capitalism.

Conclusion

Antonio Gramsci's ideas revolutionized political theory by looking **beyond economics**. He argued that **culture** and **ideology** play a crucial role in shaping societies. Gramsci's concept of **hegemony** explains how dominant groups maintain power not just through force, but by shaping ideas and public discourse. He also identified the importance of "**organic intellectuals**," leaders within social movements who challenge these dominant ideas. Overall, Gramsci's work provides a powerful lens for understanding **power**, **resistance**, and **the forces that drive social change.**

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **Gramsci** was **a prominent Marxist theorist**. He shifted the focus from **economic determinism** to **cultural and ideological factors**. His concept of **hegemony** explains how the ruling class maintains power through consent, not just force, influencing modern political thought.

▷ **Antonio Gramsci** developed theories on **cultural hegemony** and the role of **intellectuals** in shaping societal norms. His ideas challenged traditional Marxism by emphasizing the power of **ideology** and **cultural institutions** in sustaining capitalist dominance.

Interlinkages

▷ **Gramsci and Marxism**: Gramsci's concept of **cultural hegemony** builds upon **Marx's** theory of **economic base and superstructure**, emphasizing the role of **ideology** and **culture** in maintaining power. This shift adds depth to Marx's ideas on **class struggle** and **revolution**.

▷ **Gramsci and Liberalism**: Gramsci's emphasis on **civil society** and **cultural power** contrasts with **liberal thinkers** like **John Stuart Mill**, who focus on individual liberty. Both, however, underline the importance of **societal participation** in shaping a just system of governance.

▷ **Gramsci and Democracy**: Gramsci's ideas on **counter-hegemony** align with debates in **democratic theory**, particularly in discussions about the **role of the state** and **civil society** in maintaining political stability. His two-stage revolution theory provides a critique of **liberal democracy**.

▷ **Gramsci and Feminism**: Gramsci's theory of **cultural domination** and the role of **intellectuals** connects with **feminist** theory. Feminists use his framework to understand how **patriarchy** and **gender inequalities** are maintained through **cultural norms** and **media representations**.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Cultural Hegemony in Media**: Today, **media** continues to be a major tool for **cultural hegemony**, shaping public opinion and reinforcing the values of the **dominant class**. For example, **Hollywood** often portrays a particular **family structure** as the societal norm, marginalizing alternative lifestyles.

▷ **Counter-Hegemony in Social Movements**: **Gramsci's concept of counter-hegemony** is central to modern **social movements** like **Black Lives Matter**. These movements challenge **dominant ideologies**, such as systemic racism, using **grassroots efforts** to shift public opinion and power structures.

▷ **Organic Intellectuals in Activism**: Gramsci's idea of **organic intellectuals** can be seen in modern **activists** and **artists** who use their platforms to challenge societal norms. **Environmental activists** like **Greta Thunberg** challenge dominant corporate ideologies around climate change.

▷ **Global Capitalism and Inequality**: Gramsci's critique of **capitalism** resonates today, as **economic inequality** grows globally. The **concentration of wealth** among a few corporations and individuals, despite **global poverty**, demonstrates how **capitalist hegemony** persists in shaping **economic policies**.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ **Gramsci's theories on hegemony and intellectuals** provide a comprehensive understanding of power. His ideas remain **relevant today** as they explain how **dominant ideologies** maintain control in both **society** and **politics**.

▷ **Gramsci's analysis** of the **superstructure** and **civil society** reshaped Marxist theory. His focus on **cultural influence** and **counter-hegemony** continues to inform **resistance movements** and debates on **social change** in modern times.

HANNAH ARENDT: AN INCONSISTENT YET ORIGINAL THINKER

"Unthinkable respect for authority is the greatest enemy of truth." - *Albert Einstein*

Previous year Questions (PYQs)

▷ **Critically examine Hannah Arendt's conceptual triad of labour, work, and action. (2019)**
▷ **Discuss Hannah Arendt's analysis of the role of Ideology in modern totalitarian regimes. (2016)**
▷ **Comment on: "Power is never the property of an individual; it belongs to a group and remains in existence only so long as the group keeps together." (2014)**
▷ **Hannah Arendt's conception of the 'political. (2012)**
▷ **Discuss the political philosophy of Hannah Arendt. (2003)**

Insights from PYQs

The questions explore **Hannah Arendt's political philosophy**, focusing on her **triad of labour, work, and action**, the role of **ideology in totalitarian regimes**, the **collective nature of power**, her **conception of the political** emphasizing **public engagement**, and her overall views on **freedom** and **authority**.

Introduction: Hannah Arendt as a Thinker

▷ Hannah Arendt was one of the seminal political thinkers of the twentieth century. The power and originality of her thinking was evident in works such as *The Origins of Totalitarianism (1951)*, *The Human Condition (1958)*, *On Revolution (1961), Eichmann in Jerusalem: A Report on the Banality of Evil (1963)* and *On Violence (1969)*.

▷ She has delved on multiple ideas through her own prism of experience and contemplation. Arendt's work undertakes a reconstruction of the nature of political existence.

▷ Hannah is particularly known for her analysis of the problems of human freedom and the various forms of power revealing in the contemporary society. Her thinking is so original that it cannot be clubbed with any of the prevalent ideologies.

▷ Hannah Arendt proceeds with, beginning from a phenomenological prioritization of the "**factical**" and experiential character of human life, endeavouring to uncover the fundamental structures of political experience.

KEY FACTS...

Methodology: Phenomenology

Known for: Views on Totalitarianism, Revolution, Political and her unique interpretation.

Key ideas: Views on totalitarianism, Human condition, *Vita activa* and *vita contemplativa*, banality of evil.

Impact: Arendt has been considered as the **original thinker.** She is perhaps the only woman scholar recognised as **philosopher**. For the functioning of democracies in substantive manner, her suggestions (active political participation) remain highly relevant.

Life of Hannah Arendt

▷ She was one of the brilliant American political philosophers. She was born in Germany. With the rise of Nazism in Germany, she became a political activist in 1933. Later in 1941 she migrated to the United States and in due course she became an intellectual celebrity and succeeded to obtain professorial positions in American universities.

▷ A thinker of heterodox and complicated argumentation, Arendt's writings draw inspiration from **Heidegger**, **Aristotle**, **Augustine**, **Kant**, **Nietzsche**, **Jaspers**, and others.

168

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

Hannah Arendt on Totalitarianism (Reign of Terror)

▷ **CONTEXT:** Arendt's first major work, *The Origins of Totalitarianism* published in 1951, is a response to the devastating events of her own time – the rise of Nazi Germany and the catastrophic fate of European Jewry at its hands, the rise of Soviet Stalinism and its annihilation of millions of peasants, free-thinking intellectuals, scientists and political activists.

▷ **RULE OF VIOLENCE:** Arendt emphasised that these political evil forms could not be interpreted as merely larger or more extensive versions of earlier precursors, but rather as a wholly "novel form of government" based on **terror and ideological fabrication**.

Two Instruments of Totalitarian State

Terror	Ideology

▷ **TERROR AS END:** Modern totalitarian governments have employed fear less strategically than past tyrannies, which had used it as a tool for gaining or maintaining power. Instead, terror had become a political aim and end in itself.

▷ **POPULARITY OF IDEA:** Totalitarian ideologies were popular due to the devastation of order and the spread of revolutionary unrest due to WW-1 and Great Depression, creating a clear path to secure future.

▷ **EROSION OF FREEDOM AND LIBERTY:** European populations were vulnerable due to the **erosion space for freedom and liberty and thus the public life'** with the expansion of imperialist capital and the capture of the state by bourgeoisie.
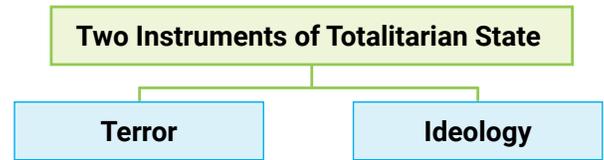
HANNAH ARENDT ON IDEOLOGY

▷ Arendt is a critique of ideology as ideologies are unscientific and misused by the totalitarian leaders (for instance, *Fascism and Communism*).

▷ **Marx** claimed his theory as science and **Hitler** based his theory of Racial Superiority of Aryan Race on Darwin's theory of *"Struggle for existence and natural selection"*.

▷ Totalitarians rooted their ideas in nature's superhuman laws. And they call for observing these laws and play active role in the History.

▷ They appealed masses to kill **Targeted Enemies** in the name of Historical Laws. And when people become part of conspiracy, it is easy to justify **VIOLENCE**.

What Conditions give Rise to Totalitarianism and why People get Influenced by Totalitarianism?

▷ **LACK OF SOCIETAL ORDER:** The most conducive environment for growth of totalitarianism is socio economic crisis and instability of life.

▷ **MODERNITY:** Arendt blames modernity for rise of totalitarianism. In symbolic sense she says that modernity begins with the explosion of nuclear bomb in Hiroshima. In her work The Human Condition, she believes that the most important human action is participation in public affairs. Modernity has ended the public sphere and given rise to centralised bureaucratic administration with the belief that bureaucrats would work in public interest. Since modernity made economic sphere the most important one, we neglected political sphere and it resulted into the state becoming totalitarian.

▷ **DEPOLITICISED MASSES:** According to her, when **depoliticised masses** are enfranchised, it gives rise to totalitarianism. Depoliticised masses get right to vote which gives rise to **demagogic leaders** and **mobocracy**.

Only when the people act in a responsible manner and participate in politics, they can prevent the emergence of totalitarianism.

The prime culprit is **Plato**, whose metaphysics subordinate action and appearances to the eternal realm of the Ideas. In the Allegory of cave (The Republic), Plato describes the world of huma affairs in terms of shadows and darkness.

The Vita Activa: Labour, Work and Action (Conceptual Triad)

In The Human Condition Arendt argues for a tripartite division between the human activities of labour, work, and action. Moreover, she arranges these activities in an **ascending hierarchy of importance** and identifies the **overturning of this hierarchy** as central to the eclipse of political freedom and responsibility which, for her, has come to characterize the modern age.

Labor: Humanity as Animal Laborans

▷ Labour is that activity which corresponds to the biological processes and necessities of human existence (for maintenance of life).

▷ Arendt is highly **critical of Marx's elevation of** *animal laborans* to a position of primacy in his vision of the highest ends of human existence.

▷ Drawing on the Aristotelian distinction of the oikos (the private realm of the household) from the polis (the public realm of the political community), Arendt argues that matters of labour, economy and the like properly belong to the former, not the latter.

▷ The prioritization of the economy (capitalism) has eclipsed the possibilities of meaningful political agency and the pursuit of higher ends which should be the proper concern of public life.

Work: Humanity as Homo Faber

If labour relates to basic necessities of life, **work is "the activity** which corresponds to the unnaturalness of human existence i.e. fabrication of an artificial world of things.

Humanity in this mode of its activity is called as *homo faber*. A person is the builder of walls (both physical and cultural) which divide the human realm from that of nature and provide a stable context of spaces and institutions within which human life can unfold.

Homo Faber's typical representatives are the builder, the architect, the craftsperson, the artist and the legislator, as they **create the public world** both physically and institutionally by constructing buildings and making laws.

Distinction between Labour *(Animal laborans)* **and Work** *(Homo faber)*

1. Whereas labour is bound to the demands of animality, biology and nature, work violates the realm of nature by shaping and transforming it according to the plans and needs of humans; this makes work a distinctly human (i.e. non-animal) activity.

2. Since work is governed by human ends and intentions, it exhibits a certain quality of freedom.

Whereas labour is concerned with satisfying the individual's life-needs and so remains essentially a private affair, **work is inherently public**.

Action: Humanity as Zoon Politikon

▷ **Homo Faber vs. Human Freedom:** Arendt argues that the activity of homo faber does not equate with human freedom and cannot occupy the apex of the human condition.

▷ **Freedom in the Vita Activa:** The quality of freedom, essential to politics, is found in the activity of action proper within the vita activa.

▷ **Action as Freedom:** The defining quality of action is its interminable freedom, its status as an end in itself. Arendt, drawing from Augustine, equates human action with freedom.

> Freedom is **"an accessory of doing and acting;"** "Men are free… as long as they act, neither before nor after; for to be free and to act are the same."

▷ **Public Nature of Action:** Action is a public category, experienced through interaction with others, corresponding to the human condition of plurality.

▷ **Importance of Publicity and Plurality:** Action gains meaning through the presence of others who witness it.

▷ **Action as Political:** For Arendt, action is synonymous with the political; politics involves citizens exercising their agency through free speech and persuasion.

COMPONENTS OF ACTION

Freedom = Natality	Plurality
▷ She defines freedom as natality. Natality means capacity to do something new.	▷ **Equality:** Sameness i.e. all of us are humans and equal.
▷ She puts emphasis on people's participation in politics and freedom to express oneself recognising worth of each person.	▷ **Diversity:** Though all of us are same, yet different. It means, everyone is unique and has capacity to do something new.

170

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

> *"…freedom…is actually the reason that men live together in political organisations at all. Without it, political life as such would be meaningless. The raison d'être of politics is freedom, and its field of experience is action."*
>
> *"Power is actualised only where word and deed haven't parted company, where words are not empty and deeds not brutal, where words are not used to veill intentions but to disclose realities and deeds are not used to violate and destroy but to establish relations and create new realities." -Hannah Arendt*

Hannah Arendt on Revolution

Hannah Arendt in her work, *On Revolution (1961)* takes her rethinking of political concepts and applies them to the modern era. Arendt **criticizes both liberal and Marxist interpretations** of modern political revolutions (such as the French and American).

▷ **Criticism of Liberals:** She disagrees with the view that revolutions were primarily concerned with the establishment of a limited government with space for individual liberty.

▷ **Criticism of Marxists:** She disputes the claim that French Revolution was a popular attempt to **overcome poverty and exclusion** by the many against the few who monopolized wealth.

> **Arendt's View:** The revolutions exhibit the exercise of fundamental political capacities – that of individuals acting together on the basis of their mutually agreed common purposes, in order to establish a tangible public space of freedom. Yet Arendt sees both the **French** and **American revolutions** as ultimately failing to establish a perduring political space in which the on-going activities of shared deliberation, decision and coordinated action could be exercised.
>
> The average citizen, while protected from arbitrary exercise of authority by constitutional checks and balances, was no longer a participant "in judgement and authority," and so became denied the possibility of exercising his/her political capacities.

Eichmann of Jerusalem: The Banality of Evil

The concept emerged in her book *Eichmann in Jerusalem: A Report on the Banality of Evil (1963).*

▷ **Shift in Focus:** This work of Arendt marks a **shift** in her concerns **from the nature of political action** to a concern deeper– the **interrelated activities of thinking and judging**. She wanted to know present times **evil does not appear evil**, it has become **banal or normal** part of day-to-day life.

▷ **The Bureaucratic Machine:** During the **trial of Eichmann** (an official responsible for extermination of Jews), she realised that he was not the real culprit. He did not even have hatred towards the Jews. Rather the **Bureaucratic Culture** i.e., **culture of blind obedience**.

> *"Persons who commit crimes are neither monsters, psychopaths, sociopaths or brilliant. They are just bureaucrats."*
>
> *-Hannah Arendt*

171

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

▷ **Fault of Eichmann:** He had lost imaginative capacity. He was not aware of moral consequences of his actions. He was an innocuous man who operated without thinking.

▷ **Faceless Nature:** So, evil becomes banal when it acquires **unthinking systematic character** and when ordinary people participate in it, build distance form it, **justify it in countless ways**. There **are no moral conundrums and revulsions**. In such situation, **evil does not look like evil, it becomes faceless**.

Presently in our society the issues involving like **mob violence**, **discrimination** and **oppression** are key evils, it becomes banal when people become **spectators** and at times **un-thinking participants**.

Criticism of Hannah Arendt

▷ **Feminist Critique:** Arendt's strict division between the "private" and "public" spheres results in exclusion of women form the legitimate politics as the outside or "public" realm is subject to domination by men.

▷ **Marxist Critique:** Marxists criticize her for separating economic matters (social justice, poverty and exploitation) from political discussion and neglecting issues of social justice.

▷ **Arendts' endorsement of Athenian state** and ignoring the modern political institutions is criticized by the scholars as direct participation of all the people seems unworkable. Further, her notion of superiority of political action and subordination of other modes of human action has also been challenged.

Concluding Remark

Despite these and other criticisms, Arendt continues to be one of the most innovative, thought-provoking, and important political thinkers of the 20th century. Her work will undoubtedly continue to inspire political philosophy as we moved into the 21st century.

Introduction for the Answers

▷ **Hannah Arendt** was a pioneering 20th-century political thinker. She is known for her analyses on totalitarianism, revolution, and the nature of power. Her original ideas challenge conventional political ideologies, offering profound insights into modern political existence.

▷ **Hannah Arendt** redefined political theory by examining the nature of power, freedom, and the human condition. Her works, especially on totalitarianism and violence, provide a critical understanding of contemporary political structures and individual agency.

Interlinkages

▷ **Arendt and Marxism**: Arendt's critique of ideology and **totalitarianism** can be compared to **Marxist** theories of class struggle. Both examine the dynamics of power, but Arendt highlights **culture** and **ideology**, whereas Marx focuses on **economic relations**.

▷ **Arendt and Liberalism**: Arendt's views on **freedom** and **participation** contrast with liberal thinkers like **John Stuart Mill**, who prioritize individual liberty. Arendt emphasizes active participation in the **public sphere** as essential for meaningful political life.

▷ **Arendt and Democracy**: Arendt's analysis of **revolution** and **power** connects with modern **democratic theories**. Her critique of the failure of revolutions links with debates on **participatory democracy** and the **role of citizens** in shaping governance.

▷ **Arendt and Feminism**: Arendt's **division** between the **public** and **private spheres** has influenced feminist theorists. Her emphasis on political action in the **public realm** and its exclusion of women from legitimate politics is a subject of feminist critique and reinterpretation.

Contemporary Relevance

▷ **Modern Totalitarianism**: Arendt's insights on **totalitarianism** remain relevant today, especially as **authoritarian regimes** emerge globally. Leaders in countries like **North Korea** or **China** exhibit characteristics of Arendt's **ideological control** and **fear-based rule**.

▷ **Civic Participation**: Arendt's advocacy for **active participation** in the **public sphere** resonates in contemporary movements like **#MeToo** or **Black Lives Matter**, where citizens actively engage in political action to challenge entrenched power structures and injustices.

▷ **Banality of Evil in Bureaucracy**: Arendt's concept of the **banality of evil** has contemporary relevance in analyzing the **dehumanizing effects** of bureaucratic systems. Modern examples, such as **war crimes** in conflict zones, show how ordinary individuals become complicit in atrocities.

▷ **Technology and Politics**: Arendt's critique of **modern technology** highlights concerns over how **technological advancements** today, like surveillance and data collection, might be eroding personal freedoms and enabling political **control**, exemplified in the use of **Big Data** by governments and corporations.

Conclusion for the Answers

▷ **Hannah Arendt**'s political philosophy continues to offer fresh perspectives on power, violence, and freedom. Her exploration of totalitarianism and revolutionary action remains deeply relevant for understanding today's political dynamics and individual responsibility.

▷ Despite critiques, **Hannah Arendt's** work on totalitarianism, power, and human freedom stands as one of the most influential contributions to political thought, shaping contemporary debates on governance, civil liberties, and democracy.

173

ONLINE | AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PRAYAGRAJ | PUNE | RANCHI

VISIONIAS
INSPIRING INNOVATION

Smart and Effective
Notes Making for UPSC CSE
Principles and Strategies

Why Notes Making?

Note-making for the UPSC exam is a strategic tool that significantly enhances an aspirant's ability to understand, retain, and revise the vast curriculum effectively. This personalized study aid helps in breaking down complex topics into digestible pieces, facilitating easier recollection and efficient last-minute revisions.

Principles of Notes Making

- **Personalize Notes:** Understand your learning style for effective customization which should be prepared in an integrated manner for both Prelims and Mains examination.
- **Format Choice:** Opt for digital, handwritten, or a hybrid approach based on learning ease.
- **Summarization and Organization:** Condense passages, use bullet points for clear organization.
- **Current Affairs Integration:** Enhance note relevance by integrating current affairs with static topics.
- **Language Precision:** Emphasize keywords, concepts, and examples; avoid complete sentences.

Scan to access Essential Learning Resources.

Smart Strategies for Effective Notes Making

Reliable Sources
Choose reputable sources that meet the demands of the examination.

Summarize and Organize
Highlight or underline important points while reading, then summarize these in your own words.

Link to the UPSC Syllabus
To ensure easy referencing of subject, topic, and subtopic for efficient exam preparation.

Integrate Visual Aids
Use diagrams, flowcharts, and mind maps to visualize complex relationships between topics.

Current Affairs
Create a dedicated section and link it to corresponding static topics for a comprehensive understanding.

Regular Revision
Frequently revisit your notes to reinforce your memory and improve your retention.

💡 ***Use bullet points, headings, and subheadings to structure your notes clearly.***

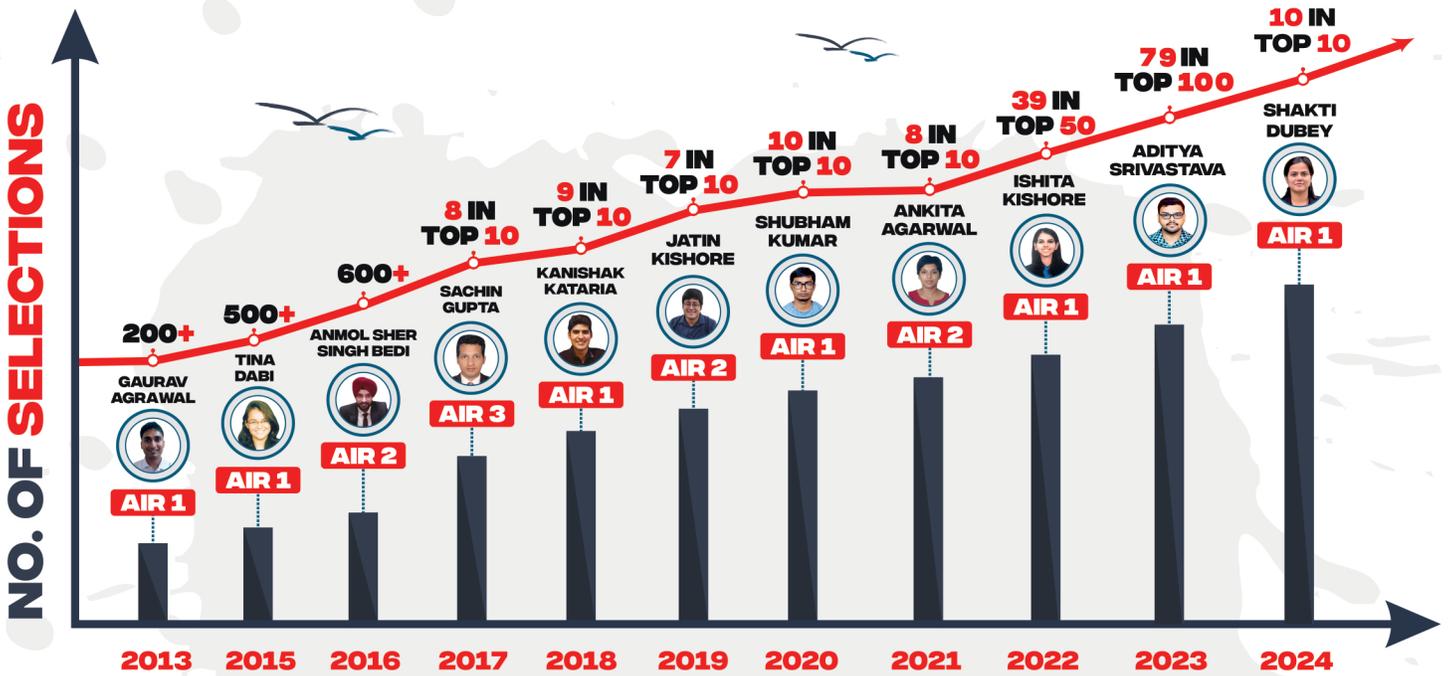## Vision IAS Smart Quality Content

Designed and developed for smooth understanding, learning, retention, and reproduction of content in the UPSC Examination. Further, it also facilitates smart and efficient note-making.

- **Simplified Complex Topics:** Makes tough subjects easier and more digestible for better understanding.
- **Up-to-date Information:** Offers latest, relevant study materials aligned with current exam requirements.
- **Analytical Skills Development:** Boosts essential critical and analytical thinking through quizzes.
- **Resource Optimization:** Uses infographics & smart presentations for more efficient time and resource utilization.
- **Enriched Presentation:** Utilizes thematic colors and tables for fast information identification and recall.

Scan to know more, explore, and integrate the Smart Quality Content in your learning.

AHMEDABAD | BENGALURU | BHOPAL | CHANDIGARH | DELHI | GUWAHATI | HYDERABAD | JAIPUR | JODHPUR | LUCKNOW | PUNE | PRAYAGRAJ | RANCHI

Heartiest Congratulations
to all Successful Candidates

10 in **TOP 10** Selections in **CSE 2024** from various programs of **Vision IAS**

1 AIR
Shakti Dubey

2 AIR — **Harshita Goyal**

3 AIR — **Dongre Archit Parag**

4 AIR — **Shah Margi Chirag**

5 AIR — **Aakash Garg**

6 AIR — **Komal Punia**

7 AIR — **Aayushi Bansal**

8 AIR — **Raj Krishna Jha**

9 AIR — **Aditya Vikram Agarwal**

10 AIR — **Mayank Tripathi**

79 Selections in **TOP 100** in **CSE 2023**

1 AIR — **Aditya Srivastava**

2 AIR — **Animesh Pradhan**

5 AIR — **Ruhani**

AHMEDABAD   BENGALURU   BHOPAL   CHANDIGARH   DELHI   GUWAHATI   HYDERABAD   JAIPUR   JODHPUR   LUCKNOW   PRAYAGRAJ   PUNE   RANCHI